GAELIC WITHOUT A TEACHER

MACLAREN'S

GAELIC SELF-TAUGHT

AN INTRODUCTION TO GAELIC FOR BEGINNERS.

WITH EASY IMITATED PHONETIC PRONUNCIATION

THIRD EDITION—COMPLETELY REVISED

ALEXANDER MACLAREN & SONS,
360-362 ARGYLE STREET, GLASGOW.
GAELIC DICTIONARIES.

Macdonald's Gaelic Dictionary, revised edition, 3 vols., 42/- net ($10.50), postage, British Isles, 1/3, Colonies, 2/-.

It is the only dictionary in which are all the Gaelic words in the Dictionaries of Armstrong, Gaelic Society, MacAlpine, Macbain, MacEachen, MacLeod and Dewar, and works on Gaelic names, disresses, and herbs by Ferguson, Gillies, and Cameron, and many other words not contained in the foregoing.

Macdonald's New Illustrated Gaelic-English Dictionary is now the recognised authority on the language of the Gael. It contains over 80,000 words, the most complete yet issued, containing every word that is in all the other Gaelic Dictionaries and in Modern Gaelic Literature, and a vast number that have been specially collected and never in print before. Complete lists of names; personal, proper, geographical, beasts, birds, plants, mythological, technical terms, implements, etc. This work has been revised by all the best scholars of the day, and is the fruit of over 50 years' labour of the editor.

Macbain's Etymological Gaelic Dictionary, by the late Alex. Macbain, M.A., LL.D., new edition; edited by Malcolm Macfarlane, enlarged with the author's corrections and additions, cloth, 21/- ($5.10).

The original edition was issued in 1895, and was sold out within fifteen months. This book puts on record nearly all the primary words of the language, giving their forms in old, early, and middle Gaelic, tracing them to their roots, and in most cases giving cognate words from other languages. Every word in the Gaelic language, with the exception of derivatives, is dealt with—Irish, Welsh, Cornish, and Breton; parallel words are given in every case where such exist. The word is then traced, where possible, to its Aryan root; and the cognate forms in other European languages, as well as in Sanskrit, are presented. Recent works on Celtic Philology, such as Henry's "Dictionary of Breton Etymology," have been carefully compared and re-examined; and numerous additions have been made to the 630 purely Gaelic words of the first edition. Students of Gaelic cannot afford to be without a copy of Macbain's Dictionary.

Macfarlane's School Gaelic-English Dictionary. The scholars' friend in many ways, 7 6 net ($1.85). Postage 6d.

The School Dictionary—a handy and cheap dictionary compiled and edited by Malcolm Macfarlane. Besides being a reference-book for the English meanings and for the inflections of words, much other useful and necessary information for the guidance of Gaelic writers is to be found in its pages, such as a table of words which are frequently spelt in a wrong way or at variance with the most advanced etymological knowledge; instructions to writers in preparing 'copy' for the press and correcting printer's proofs; full tables of numerals; tables of the phases of the article, the pronouns and prepositional pronouns; personal names; punctuation, and the place of the hyphen at the ends of lines; together with an introduction.

Maceeachan's Gaelic-English Dictionary, edited and enlarged by Dr. Macbain and John Whyte, 3/- (75 cents), postage 5d.

A handy cheap dictionary for school and ordinary purposes. The present edition contains over 11,000 words; its merits have been testified to and it has been warmly recommended by the Education Department.

A new edition of the above dictionary has long been overdue, and students and teachers of Gaelic will rejoice exceedingly in its appearance, revised and enlarged, in an attractive looking volume of nearly 500 pages—a marvel of cheapness in these days of high costs of production. It has been carefully and thoroughly revised by two highly competent Gaelic-speaking scholars under the general supervision of Dr. J. L. Robertson, C.B., who have added a very large number of literary words and eliminated what might be regarded as unimportant or irrelevant details. The dictionary in its present form is the most useful and accurate compendium current of the ordinary colloquial and literary vocabulary of the Gaelic language, and as such is eminently suited for the advanced classes in schools and for general use by intelligent students.
**GAELIC SELF TAUGHT**

**AN INTRODUCTION TO GAELIC FOR BEGINNERS.**

Complete in 1 Vol. 192 pages, 2/- net, postage 3d ex.

The aim of this handbook is to provide all who desire a practical knowledge of the Gaelic language with a simple and efficient means of acquiring it. The student will find that the phonetic pronunciation goes far to remove the difficulties encountered on his first introduction to the language, and greatly facilitates the labours of both teacher and pupil, while to those who cannot avail themselves of the aid of a teacher's voice it will prove an invaluable guide.

"The book is conceived on quite good lines, and would form a satisfactory introduction to such books as Norman MacLeod's re-arranged and enlarged edition of Reid's Elementary Course."—"An Deò Gréine.""'

"This aid to the elementary study of modern Gaelic, of which four parts are to hand, is the work of one who has gone through the experience of getting up the language from its very elements, and is specially intended for students to whom it is a foreign tongue. An important feature, therefore, is that it contains satisfactory guides for pronunciation, which is always a serious stumbling-block to beginners. In some cases, no doubt, the reproduction of genuine Gaelic sounds by English letters is in the strictest sense well-nigh impossible, and needs to be supplemented vita voce. On the whole, however, a very fair idea is given, and the work of the teacher is in the case of learners of the language very much simplified. There are useful explanations, throughout, of the peculiarities of Gaelic idiom as compared with English, and the little book may be strongly recommended for the use of learners of the language as, on the whole, conceived and executed on sound educational lines."—"Northern Chronicle."

It is without doubt the most concise and easily understood Gaelic Grammar yet published. There are many Gaelic Grammars, but they have all been constructed on archaic lines. Nothing could exceed the simplicity of the book pronunciation of Gaelic seems hopeless to anyone who has not been born to it or conversed long with natives; but by this book, if by any, a rapid and intelligent acquaintance with the language can be made. Its graduated exercises, and its numerous examples make its most satisfactory features.

**An Unsolicited Appreciation.**—"It may not be amiss to say that the two elementary works of yours have made the initial stages of the study very easy for me. My Gaelic speaking friends here consider I am making very fair progress, and I hope to be able to read intelligently a considerable quantity of literature which has lain in the house (for obvious reasons) some thirty years untouched.—Yours faithfully, W.C."

The Gaelic Grammar is here set out in a progressive system that takes more account than usual of the special difficulties of the English-speaking beginner. The explanations are clear and adequate.—"Scotsman."

The work is intended to assist beginners, and has been constructed on lines of conspicuous simplicity. The service to learners of the Gaelic tongue and to teachers also will be found of great value. From what we ourselves know of teaching the ancient language of the Gael we heartily approve of the author's method and system. The various lessons and exercises are judiciously and effectively graded, and the difficulties which invariably meet learners of Gaelic rendered easy by simple, helpful explanations and illustrations which go far to make the study of the language not a little attractive. Pronunciation and spelling are immensely simplified by the use of phonetic equivalents, in the construction of which the author has been very successful indeed. There is grammar throughout the little work too, but it is the natural grammar inherent in the language, and not the arbitrary, aggressive grammar of the schools. We heartily commend this excellent effort to all interested in acquiring an acquaintance with Gaelic by simple methods and in a short space of time.—"Highland News."
Our Revised
Gaelic Book Catalogue
is issued
at intervals as required

_A Post Card will bring our Latest_

Alex. MacLaren & Sons
Gaelic Publishers
360-362 Argyle St. Glasgow
SUAS LEIS A' GHAIDHЛИG

MACLAREN'S
GAELIC
SELF-TAUGHT

THIRD EDITION—COMPLETELY REVISED

GLASGOW:
ALEX. MACLAREN & SONS,
Gaelic Publishers, Printers, and Booksellers,
360-362 Argyle Street.
Key to MacLaren's Gaelic Self-Taught, with answers to examination questions, etc., price 1/6 (1/8 post free), from the publishers, ALEX. MacLAREN & SONS, 360 Argyle Street, Glasgow.

Paper made, printed, and bound in Scotland.
PREFACE.

It was my original intention merely to correct and revise Mr. James White MacLean's "Introduction to Gaelic," but as the revision progressed I found that I was practically re-writing the whole work so that the portion of it I was leaving intact had also to be re-written, regraded and arranged to suit the revised matter. The volume I present to the student is therefore an entirely new work.

I have endeavoured to keep the phonetic sounds as simple as possible; some of the finer ones may have been omitted, but these may be left to be acquired as the student progresses. I have considered it inadvisable to follow the pronunciation of any one district. Varying dialects will be found in Sutherland, Inverness, Lewis, Skye, Mull and Islay, and I have endeavoured to find a standard between them. On the whole a very fair idea of the pronunciation is given and the work of the teacher is thus in the case of learners of the language very much simplified. The various lessons and exercises are judiciously and effectively graded and the difficulties which invariably meet learners of Gaelic rendered easy by simple, helpful explanations and illustrations of the peculiarities of Gaelic idiom as compared with English, which should go far to make the study of the language not a little attractive.
A teacher who can speak the language should not confine himself to the lessons alone. He should introduce familiar objects by simple short questions and answers suggested by or containing some words in the lessons. Such phrases may be written on the blackboard to be copied by the pupils into their books. But to teach the pupil *to speak* should be the main object, as a living language is synonymous with a spoken language. Pronounce every word of Gaelic in the vocabularies, exercises, etc., and make the pupils in turn read out the Gaelic sentences. At the same time I have tried to make the lessons throughout as clear and as simple as possible, remembering that a large number of my readers will have no teacher. Beginners should be cautious of using some Gaelic words in any way outside their use as they occur in the lessons.

I have again avoided as far as possible the unnecessary use of the accent or duration mark and the apostrophe. In this I have followed the suggestions given from time to time by authorities on Gaelic. As instances where I consider it necessary to use an accent however, such words as *bata, bâta; bas, bâs; cas, càs*, could be given. I have retained the apostrophe in the negative *cha'n*; but it, too, is being avoided more and more, and the form *chan* is getting generally adopted. Complete Gaelic-English and English-Gaelic vocabularies have been added to this edition.

In the preparation of this little book I have to acknowledge my indebtedness to each and all of our Gaelic grammars and grammarians; all having contributed in some way, more or less; in some cases by a suggestion and others by a quotation. I have also to acknowledge
much help received from the study of Irish grammars. In the revisal of manuscript and assistance in proof reading I am much indebted to one of our rising Gaelic writers, Mr. Hector Macdougall, without whose help, readily given, it is questionable if I would have attempted this volume. My acknowledgements are also due to Mr. John MacDonald, M.A., for some time teacher of Gaelic in Glasgow High School, for valuable help and assistance.

Suas leis a’ Ghàidhlig.

JAMES MACLAREN.
ABBREVIATIONS.

Most of these, such as *adj.* for *adjective* are not given, as they cannot but be understood; others are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>d, dat.</td>
<td>dative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f, fem.</td>
<td>feminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g, gen.</td>
<td>genitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cf.</td>
<td>compare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m.</td>
<td>masculine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nm.</td>
<td>noun masculine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f, nf.</td>
<td>noun feminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n, nom.</td>
<td>nominative</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lesson</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>iii.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. The Alphabet. Vowel and Consonant Sounds</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Present Independent Tense, <em>tha</em></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Present Dependent Tense, <em>bheil</em></td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Past Independent Tense, <em>bha</em></td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Past Dependent Tense, <em>robh</em></td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Subjunctive Independent Tense, <em>bhithein</em></td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Subjunctive Dependent Tense, <em>bhithein</em></td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Future Independent Tense, <em>bithidh</em></td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Future Dependent and Relative, <em>bithidh, bhitheas</em></td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. Verb &quot;to be&quot; Imperative, <em>bitheam</em></td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. Verb &quot;to be&quot; General Revival</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;possession&quot; with <em>bi</em> and <em>aig</em></td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;to want&quot; with <em>bi</em> and <em>bho</em></td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;to know&quot; with <em>bi</em> and <em>aig</em></td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;feeling&quot; etc., with <em>bi</em> and <em>air</em></td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;existence&quot; with <em>bi</em> and <em>ann</em></td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII. The assertive verb <em>is</em></td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII. Application of <em>is</em> and <em>tha</em></td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX. The verbs <em>is</em> and <em>tha</em> in question and answer</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX. Gaelic Idioms, &quot;ownership&quot; with <em>is</em> and <em>le</em></td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXI. <em>Bi</em> and the Compound Tenses of all the other verbs</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXII. The Definite Article</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIII. The Noun. I., General Remarks and Rule</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIV. The Noun. II., Particular Rules</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXV. The Noun. III., Particular Rules (polysyllables)</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVI. Government of Nouns, genitive, dative, compound</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVII. The Adjective</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVIII. The Adjective with definite article</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIX. The Adjective with <em>is</em> and <em>tha</em></td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
XXX. The Adjective in comparison, ... ... ... 88
XXXI. Numeral Adjective, ... ... ... 92
XXXII. Personal Pronoun, ... ... ... 99
XXXIII. Prepositional Pronoun, ... ... ... 101
XXXIV. Possessive Adjective or Pronoun, ... ... ... 103
XXXV. Idioms with bi and prepositional possessive pronoun, ... ... ... 106
XXXVI. Relative Pronoun, ... ... ... 109
XXXVII. Interrogative Relative Pronouns, ... ... ... 113
XXXVIII. Demonstrative Pronouns, etc., ... ... ... 114
XXXIX. Indefinite Pronouns, etc., ... ... ... 116
XL. The Verb. General Remarks and Particles, ... 118
XLI. The Verb. The Past Tense, ... ... ... 124
XLII. The Verb. Future Tense, ... ... ... 126
XLIII. The Verb. Subjunctive, ... ... ... 129
XLIV. The Verb. Imperative, ... ... ... 132
XLV. The Participial Adj., ... ... ... 133
Paradigm of regular Verb, ... ... ... 135
XLVI. Conversational Exercise. Questions and Answers, ... 136
The Irregular Verbs. Synopsis of Tenses, ... ... ... 138
XLVII. Irregular Verbs, ... ... ... 140
Notes on Verbs; Irregular, Impersonal, etc., ... 141
XLVIII. Verbal Noun. Infinitive and Participle, ... ... ... 143
XLIX. Synopsis of the tenses of a Gaelic Verb, ... ... ... 149
L. Defective and other Verbs, ... ... ... 150
LI. Preposition, ... ... ... 153
LII. The Compound Preposition, ... ... ... 160
LIII. Adverb, ... ... ... 161
LIV. Conjunction, ... ... ... 165
The Gaelic Language, ... ... ... 167
How to learn to read Gaelic, ... ... ... 168
A New Numeration, ... ... ... 169
Synopsis of Aspiration, ... ... ... 170
Vocabulary. Gaelic-English, ... ... ... 172
Vocabulary. English-Gaelic, ... ... ... 179
Gaelic Self-Taught.

An Introduction to Gaelic.

1. The difficulties to be surmounted in studying and pronouncing the Gaelic are not at all so formidable or so numerous as they may at first sight appear to a person who is unacquainted with the structure of the language. The combination of vowels and quiescent consonants which present themselves in many words, impress the minds of individuals who have spent little or no time in examining the importance and nature of these combinations with the idea that the task of learning the language is impracticable. This is by no means the case, for it is quite easy by a little study and perseverance to acquire a good reading and speaking knowledge of this venerable old language.

2. The first thing that strikes us is the habitual use for the purposes of nominal and verbal flexions, of that modification of the internal vowel, traces of which we find in the English nouns "man, men," "mouse, mice," etc., and the causative verbs, "fell," "graze," and "glaze," from "fall," "grass," and "glass." In Gaelic this change appears most frequently in the cases of nouns where another vowel is inserted, and the flexion is made by changing the vowel into a diphthong or two vowels that flow so sweetly into one another as almost to become a diphthong. Thus in the numerous class of nouns the genitive singular and nominative plural are formed by changing a into ai as in dan "a song," dain "of a song," dain "songs"; so brog "a shoe" becomes in the genitive singular broige; carn "a heap" becomes cuirn; long "a ship," luinge; fiadh "a deer," feidh, etc. In a few cases contrariwise the
double-vowel or diphthong of the nominative singular becomes a single vowel in the genitive as in ceann "a head," cinn; lion "a net," lin; athair "a father," athar, etc. In the comparison of adjectives the same principle reigns—ban "fair," baine "fairer," etc.; and a considerable number of verbs change ai into a, caidil "sleep," cadal; caill "lose," call, etc.

3. But the most characteristic device for nominal and verbal flexion is what goes by the name of aspiration. This is simply a breathing represented by the letter h, which modifies the letter into a softer sound and sometimes smooths it away altogether. Thus b when aspirated becomes v, the letter s when aspirated becomes obliterated altogether, and this obliteration is carried still further in the case of f, as in fios, where the addition of the h produces fhios, in which fh is silent, leaving ios, pronounced eess.

4. Until the student understands the application of Gaelic aspiration and inflexion, he cannot make use of any Gaelic vocabulary or dictionary. By rules simple and beautiful, the aspirate h is so managed as to silence or euphonise the consonants wherever their initial sound would injure the easy flow or graceful cadence of a word, a verse, or sentence. The knowledge of the power and proper use of the aspirate is therefore the most important requirement of the Gaelic student.

5. This aspiration or breathing sign h is not included as a letter in the Gaelic alphabet, and though the sound of h is common in Gaelic words, there is not a single word in the language which commences with it.

6. The application of h in Gaelic has the effect of aspiration as we know it in English, Latin, and Greek, when used as a prefix to a vowel. In this position it has the same sound as the English aspirate h in "hold" and "him." In Gaelic it is generally followed with a hyphen and written thus: a h-uan "her lamb."

7. For certain purposes the nine consonants b c d f g m p t and also s when preceding l n r, cease to have their ordinary sound and acquire a new sound or become
silent. To indicate this change an h is affixed to them, and they are then said to be aspirated, though it is only in some cases that this term "aspiration" is to be taken in its common meaning of "breathing," as in "house." The mere affixing of the h is called aspiration although some of the effects of the combination do not appear like what is usually associated with "breathing" (par. 36).

8. In modern Gaelic grammar aspiration denotes the change that an initial consonant may undergo in the various syntactical relations of the word. It is an adjunct and aid to inflexion; it is used to denote or help in denoting gender, number, case and tense. Thus in bean mhath "a good wife," where math appears as mhath, the aspiration shows that bean is feminine; in cinn mhoir it shows that cinn from ceann is genitive masculine; in do'n cheann, the aspirated c helps to mark the dative; and in bhuail e "he struck," the aspiration differentiates the past tense from the imperative or dependent future buail. In short, aspiration in Gaelic is a sign of prime importance.

9. Aspiration may take place at the beginning, middle, or end of a word. This change is caused either by the natural sound of the word in which any of these aspirated or mutable consonants enter, requiring it by their position in a sentence; by their relation or connection with other words which have an influence on their sound. When certain words precede, the following consonant must always be aspirated. The principle of this curious change is evidently euphonic, for it takes place principally after vowels and liquids. Etymology teaches us that when a consonant is aspirated the cause is generally traced to the fact that it is flanked on both sides by a vowel; that it has a vowel before and after it, the latter if final having dropped away in the course of time. Thus the Latin word mater "mother" is in Gaelic mathair pronounced ma'uir; the original hard t being softened away almost entirely by the aspiration.*

* In the modern language final vowels do not always cause aspiration. It will always puzzle a student to understand why a "his" should aspirate, while a "her" should not aspirate. The absence of the aspiration is a sign of gender. a cheann "his head"; a ceann "her head."
10. Two words closely connected syntactically become practically compound words and are so treated in Gaelic. Hence, if the first of such a couple of words ended in a vowel, the initial of the second, if aspirable, is aspirated. Thus: mo thighe signifies "my house"; mo ends in a vowel, being in fact a genitive case; pronounced rapidly with tigh the t of the latter became vowel-flanked and was worn away to the aspirate form, th being pronounced h. A great many feminine nouns in Gaelic belonged to the a declension which answers to the Latin first declension. These nouns ended in the vowel a; now, if an adjective came to qualify such a noun, the two became a rough compound word, and the initial of the adjective being practically vowel-flanked suffered aspiration. Thus we have bean mhath for bena matis "a good wife." The genitive of nouns of the o declension (chiefly masculine) which answers to the Latin second declension, and the nominative plural also, ended in the vowel i; hence the adjective is aspirated after these cases, and the final i is in this way remembered though it has disappeared long ere now. The dative of all nouns ended in a vowel; accordingly the adjective after every dative singular is aspirated. Prepositions ending now or originally in a vowel aspirate the word they govern. Thus do thighe is for do tegos "to a house." The preposition air is now a decayed form descended from three original prepositions, these were are, vor and iarn, and only the first caused aspiration, the one which ended in a vowel. Hence arises the fact that air sometimes aspirates and sometimes does not. Thus we have air chois "afoot" parallel with air cul "behind." In the cases where the article causes aspiration this can also be traced to an original organic vowel ending which it had in these cases.

11. The use of the aspirated sounds of the consonants arose from the fact that, while in other languages inflexions of nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs are made by terminal changes, Gaelic does not admit of many terminal changes, and thus some changes are made in the body of words and others at the beginning. In mor and beag the m and b have their normal sound, but the genitives of both
begin with the sound of v as if they had been spelled vor and veag. Spelling them thus would have made a radical change in the initial consonants and would have sadly destroyed the orthography of the language and rendered etymology difficult. By retaining the initial consonant unvaried and by indicating the change to its second sound by the application of the h, Scots Gaelic has preserved its orthography. Compare the effect of the mutation of the consonant in Welsh by departing from this system. In Welsh the radical initial is changed so considerably and so often, that it is hardly recognised as the same word.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Scots Gaelic</th>
<th>Welsh</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ceann</td>
<td>pen</td>
<td>a head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do cheann</td>
<td>dy ben</td>
<td>thy head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mo cheann</td>
<td>fy mhen</td>
<td>my head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a ceann</td>
<td>ei phen</td>
<td>her head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>caraid</td>
<td>cyfaill</td>
<td>a friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do charaid</td>
<td>dy gyfaill</td>
<td>thy friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mo charaid</td>
<td>fy nghyfaill</td>
<td>my friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a caraid</td>
<td>ei chyfaill</td>
<td>her friend</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

12. But the great difficulty in Gaelic with most people lies in the pronunciation. Here the main thing to be noted is that as in our English words “though,” “plough,” etc., the final consonant having first been aspirated at last falls off altogether, similarly as a general rule does final gh and dh in Gaelic. In learning to read and speak Gaelic we require to acquire the habit of softening or slurring an aspirated consonant, as we do in the English words “might,” “light,” “fight”; merely extend this to a larger family and the speaking of Gaelic becomes easy. Thus in the middle of saoghal and sabhal the two medial consonants are omitted and the spoken letters remain saol and sawl; and in the same way b m g c at the commencement of a word are softened into bh mh gh and ch, whose pronunciation is as uniform to the ear as to the eye.

13. Gaelic is a soft vocalic and mellifluous language, in which harsh and hard sounds are avoided, softened, or assimilated. This general assimilation is a mutual smoothing down not only of an initial consonant, but also of the terminal consonant of the preceding word. It will be observed, for instance, that when the noun after the article
is aspirated, the article itself loses the final n; the second word influencing the first as much as the first influences the second; a mutual accommodation which is not found necessary when the article is followed by a dental, as it is a sound more easy of approach from the final n. Initial labials again, when not aspirated, change the n of the article to m for the same reason. This process of assimilating one word with another is an important one in Gaelic pronunciation. Similarly with vowels, an unstressed final vowel is elided before a stressed initial vowel in a word following, as: m'athair for mo athair, d'íarr for do iarr, b'thearr for bu thearr, 'nan for ann an, 'san for anns an, gu'n d'fhalbh for gu an do fhalbh, leam for le mi, gill' og for gille og.

14. Eclipsis is also a form of assimilation, an expedient governing euphony and facility of utterance, an effort at economy* in articulation, consisting of the suppression under certain circumstances of the sound of an initial mutable consonant for that of a cognate or homo-organic letter which, though not shown in the written language, is nevertheless a not uncommon feature in the spoken language in some districts of Scotland.

Instances of eclipsis as it is heard in some districts:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Consonant</th>
<th>Eclipsed Form</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>b by m</td>
<td>orain nam beann</td>
<td>(orain na meann)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d by n</td>
<td>moch an de</td>
<td>(moch ún-á)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t by d</td>
<td>gu’n d’ thainig</td>
<td>(gun danik oo)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c by g</td>
<td>an cu, nan con,</td>
<td>(ungcu, nungon)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s by t</td>
<td>an t-slat</td>
<td>(un illatt)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f by bh</td>
<td>am bheil (bheil)</td>
<td>(um vâl)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

15. The consonants are twelve in number, and these have almost unvarying sounds, determined by their proximity to either broad or small vowels, or to the aspirate h. Let the sound of these letters be once learned and their place in the syllable observed, their pronunciation will not present difficulty to any student. The chief difficulty

---

* Often a laziness in the vocal organs not to be encouraged: cf. "in a nour" for "in an hour" in English.
found is the difference in sound values certain letters have from their English sound. The sounds approximate more nearly their continental sound values. In the same way vowel sounds are still more simple.

16. As will be seen, our scheme of pronunciation is a simple one and does not attempt the extreme niceties of phonological exactitude which are the aim of more elaborate schemes, but its simplicity will be found of considerable advantage. A simplified scheme involves of course some amount of compromise; to express a greater number of vowel sounds than those indicated would have obliged the reader to refer continually to an intricate table of diacritic marks* which would have reduced its general utility. In the table the sounds chosen are standard and common to the English language, and are to be found in any dictionary. Previous gleaners in the field of Gaelic phonetics gave many localisms† as a guide to pronunciation, but as the readers of this little grammar will be scattered world-wide it is useless for us to follow suit. We have endeavoured to give some idea of the Gaelic sounds in the language which the student speaks, instead of invoking the aid of some unknown foreign tongue. A Gaelic sound can only be imitated perfectly in English if that sound occurs in English, and it stands to reason that sounds which never occur in English can only approximately be rendered in English syllables. We have many sounds peculiar to Gaelic, and it has to be

* How many of our readers can speak and pronounce Greek. Yet we are told in many Gaelic grammars that “ch broad,” is to be pronounced as a certain Greek letter is in Scotland, and that “ch small,” is to have the pronunciation it gets in England; another gives “ch as in German”; then we find that a certain a is to have the pronunciation of “a in ‘that’ as pronounced by a lowlander but not as by an Englishman.” Helps like these convey nothing to me, far less will they help a man in London, Vancouver, or Melbourne.

† Compare some of M’Alpine’s phonetic spellings; these three chosen at random look worse than the original Gaelic. *innan* (²ënn’-āën’); *meadhon oích che* (mèn’-ūv²-chyà); *buald’* (būde²-gh’) with the same under a more simplified scheme (een-yàn); (meetin-oích-ü) and (boo-y). Some of M’Alpine’s English key words, too, are based on a purely local pronunciation, and not as generally accepted.
admitted that a number of these can be acquired more accurately if heard *viva-voce*. Our imitated pronunciation is intended for self-taught students only, but with it a certain steady progress is sure to be made. The student will then be able to approach some Gaelic-speaking Highlander for further aid—there is no outpost of empire but where he will be found. A summer holiday spent in one of our Gaelic-speaking districts would be very helpful after a course such as outlined in this little work.

---

**LESSON I.**

**The Gaelic Alphabet.**

17. In the Gaelic alphabet there are eighteen characters of which five are vowels, a o u e i; and twelve are consonants b c d f g l m n p r s t; and the breathing or aspirate h.

18. The vowels are divided into broad and small—

Broad: a o u; Small or narrow: e i.

19. The consonants may be classified according to the organs of speech by which they are sounded.

- **Palatals**: c g
- **Linguals**: l n r
- **Labials**: b f m p
- **Sibilant**: s
- **Dentals**: d t

20. Certain of the consonants have a second sound, caused by aspiration. h is the mark of aspiration.

Plain, b c d f g l m n p r s t

Aspir. bh ch dh fh gh — mh — ph — sh th

Sound, v ch ugh* — ugh* — v — f — h h

21. Note l n r and s when followed by g m p t do not have an aspirated form shown in writing or print, but where the other consonants aspirate these also have a slightly aspirated sound.

22. There are two accents: the grave and the acute. Either of these indicates a long vowel with a special sound.

---

* Sound of dh and gh: page 13; pars. 40-41, page 15.
We use them in this little work sparingly, chiefly where they are necessary to distinguish between words that are the same in spelling but have different meanings. bâta "a boat," bata "a stick."

23. Two or three vowels coming together with the sound of one passing into the other are called diphthongs and and triphthongs.

Diphthongs: ai, ao; ea, ei, eo, eu; ia, io, iu; oi, ua, ui.
Triphthongs: aoi, eoi, iai, iui, uai.

24. The use of the letter i in some of the diphthongs and triphthongs is to qualify the sound of the consonant which follows it, and has no distinct sound of itself. Ao, eu, though classed among the diphthongs have but one simple sound which is always long.

The Vowel Sounds.

25. The Gaelic vowels sound very similar to the Continental vowels, as follows:—

A (ah); E (ay); I (ee); O (oh); U (oo).

Each vowel has a long and a short sound, especially when the quantity of the vowel may determine the meaning of the word. In contact with m, mh, or n, vowels become nasalised.

26. Key to the phonetic vowel sounds.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English.</th>
<th>Gaelic Examples.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>å represents a in &quot;far&quot; (fär);</td>
<td>bâs (bâs) death.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a ,, a ,, &quot;fat&quot; (fat);</td>
<td>cail (kâl) vigour.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ā ,, a ,, &quot;fate&quot; (fâl);</td>
<td>bas (bás) a palm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au ,, au ,, &quot;Paul&quot;</td>
<td>fan (fan) stay.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e ,, e ,, &quot;met&quot;</td>
<td>bheil (vâl) am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ee ,, ee ,, &quot;tree&quot;</td>
<td>aige (âkî) at him.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>anns (auns) iu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>corr (kaur) odd.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>lean (len) follow.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>le with.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tri (tree) three.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>cir (keer) comb.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
y represents ee in "feet" (fyt)  
min (myn) meal.
smig (smyk) chin.
ploc (plochk) turf.
mor (mör) big.
tom (tom) a hillock
su (koo) a dog.
cur (koor) putting.
toll (towel) hole.
fonn (fowen) a tune
goil (gül) boil.
a (üh) his, who.
gun (gün) without
laoch (löch).
binn (bynn) sweet
seinn (sháynn) singing

27. A vowel may be obscure, that is it may have a shorter sound than an ordinary short vowel. In English we have the a in "pillar," the o and e in "cover," the i in "cousin," the u in "fur," as obscure sounds which sound very much alike. In Gaelic these vowels have also an obscure sound like this. They will be shown in the pronunciation with two dots over them thus ü.

28. The following are examples of this obscure vowel sound:

- a and e final: aba (abü); feile (fälü); lugha (lüghüi).
- a and ea short before dh, gh, and unaccented ch: cogadh (kokügh); ordugh (ortügh); ciontach (kyn-tüch).
- a and u in the article and in most of the particles: am faigheadh (üm fayügh); ag radh (üg ra).
  gun (gün); lamhan (llavín); dh'íarr (yee-ür).
- ai and oi before the linguals l, n, r: tairbhé (türvií); piobair (pee-píir).

A correspondent vowel sound: airm (ürum); earb (arüp).
The plural termination of nouns: lamhan (llavín); fadhean (fáy-üm).

---

* This ö (−ao) is an obscure sound rather longer than the very short obscure u. It is a sound not heard in English. It is similar to œu in French sœur (sör); German modified ö in Sohne (sö-nü); o as pronounced by an Irishman in word; or as we hear bird sometimes sounded in English (börd).
29. Sounds of the Principal Diphthongs.

ai, eu, ei, like å in “fate”; air (är); speur (spär); fein (făn).*
ea, like å in “fate”; deán (jän); sometimes yā, neamh (nyâv).
ea, sometimes yā; eala (yâllii); fear (fyârr).
ea, ei, sometimes like e in “met”; leat (leti); geir (ger);
io, ia; long i (o and a almost silent); piob (peeòp); cian (keen); ciail (keeûl); fios (feess).
ua, uai, ui; long u like oo in “moor”; the other vowels almost complementary; luath (looûh); fuaim (fooym)
cuïn (koon); luib (looûp); cluas (klooûs).
eo, iu; the initial vowels very short; deoch (joch); ciuìr (keôwr); fliuch (flooch).
ão; obscure a, silent o; naomh (nôv); taobh ( tôv); caol (kôîl); maor (môr); gaoth (gô).
oi; as oi in “boil”; oidhche (ôichût); coilltean (koil-chûn).

30. Sounds of the Triphthongs.

aoi, as caoidh (koo-y) lament.
laioigh (lloo-y) calves.
eoî, as treoir (treo-yr) strength.
geoidh (keeô-y) geese.
ai, as ciaire (kee-ar-û) darker.
fiaire (fee-ar-û) more crooked.
ioî, as ciuin (kee-oon) meek.
fliuiche (flooch-û) wetter.
uai, as fuaim (fooûi-yû) sound.
cruaidh (krooû-y) hard.

31. A vowel is never doubled in the same syllable of a Gaelic word like ee or oo in English, and there is no silent final vowels like English e in “where” (whûr); “came” (käm)*; “give” (giv).

32. When two vowels belonging to two different syllables of the same word come in contact with each other, the common practice is to separate them by inserting a pair of silent consonants between them, thus: bi-th-eam pronounced (bee-ûm) let me be; cnothan (kro-ûn) nuts.

* The vowel sound of å in “fate” is a compound sound. In English we hear the same sound in the following combinations: they (thû); there (thûr); gaol (jâl); clay (clû); rein (rân); rain (rûn); reign (rûn); pear (pûr); pair (pûr); pare (pûr); eight (ût).
33. Vowel sounds coming together in this manner are regulated by a rule which is seldom broken. The rule is

Leathan ri leathan, agus caol ri caol.
"Broad to broad, and small to small."

34. In words of more than one syllable, the last vowel of the first syllable, and the first vowel of the next syllable must be of the same quality; i.e., if the last vowel of a syllable be broad, the first vowel of the next syllable must be broad also; but if small, a small vowel follows.

35. In conformity with this rule, a broad or small vowel is introduced, as the case may be, although it serves no purpose in respect of derivation or pronunciation. Thus, súilean is the plural of súil: an is the plural termination, and the introduction of the e makes no difference in the sound, but is inserted in conformity with the above rule. Again, all regular verbs form their future by adding idh to the root. Take the verb tog, lift, add idh to form the future tense, and you get togidh, which is a breach of the rule, as the consonant g is preceded by the broad vowel o, and followed by the small vowel i; an a must be added to keep to the rule, and the correct spelling of the future form is togaith (t(2)-y).

36. Sounds of the Consonants.

b  b is like b in "boat" with an inclination to a p sound.
bh bh at the beginning and end of a word is like v in "vale."
   bha (va) was; gabh (gav) take; siribh (shyryv).
   bh in the middle of a word is sometimes like w or u, but it is generally silent: leabhar (llyoïr) a book; dubhar (doo-úr) shade; gobhar a goat, pronounced gour, hence Ardgour.
c  c always hard like c in "call" and k in "keep." Never like s.
   When final after vowels a o u, like chk: mac (machk) a son.
ch ch has no English sound equivalent, beside a broad vowel has a strong guttural sound as the Scots word "loch" (lawch) or in "clachan." Beside a small vowel like the Scots "nicht" for "night" generally a k sound seems added.
d   d before a small vowel, is a mixture of the d in “duke” and j in “Jew”; before a broad vowel, like d in “consider,” or almost the same sound as t, only softer.

d terminal after ch:—chd; like a k, seachd (shachk) seven.

dh  dh followed by a, o, u is like ghy, it has a strong thick guttural explosive sound (see gh).

dh before a small vowel has a y sound: Mo Dhia (mo yee u) my God; in the middle and at the end of some words it is silent: radh (ra) saying; minidh (meen-y) awl; fanaidh (fann-y) will stay.

f   f is the same as in English.

fh  fh always silent fhear (err), fhad (att); except in the words fhein, fhuair, and fhatast, which are pronounced han, hoo-ur and ha-ust respectively.

g   g before a broad vowel like g in “galley”: gabh (gav) take.

g before a small vowel like g in “gear”: gile (geel-i). g preceded by or between small vowels like a k or the hard c of “can”: slige (slyki).

gh  gh before and after broad vowels like ch but more guttural, like rgh in “burgh” as sounded by one having a burr. An explosive gutteral not heard in English (par. 40).

gh before a small vowel has the sound of y in English “yes” gheibh (yov).

gh in the middle and at the end of a word has no power other than that of lengthening the sound of the preceding vowel, just as gh in English words “high” and “neighbour” and “thought,” i.e., righ (ree) a king; dheighinn (vaynn).

h   in Gaelic h is the sign of aspiration only.

I   I almost as in English.

II   II final after i as in English “million.”

m   m as in English.

mh  mh is always like a v with a nasal touch: mharbh (varv) killed; ramh (rav) an oar.

mh in the middle of a word is generally silent, imparting a nasal sound to the preceding vowel: comhradh (co-ra) dialogue.
n n as in English.

n after c g m t sounds like r nasal: cnap (krap); cno (kro) a nut; gnuth (groo) grim; mnaoi (mraoi) of a woman.

n final before an initial c or g of a word following interpolates a nasal g sound: an cu (ungkoo) the dog; nan con (nüng kon) of the dogs; ’nan cadal (nang kat-tüü) in their sleep.

nn nn after i like the ny in “Bunyan”: gn in signora.

p p as in English.

ph ph always like f as in English: phill (fyll) returned.

r r as in English, though generally with more of a roll.

rt rt as rsht: mart (marst) a cow.

s s is always sounded like sh whenever it comes before or after the small vowels: sinne (shynn-iü); there is one exception to the rule, the assertive verb is, like iss in the word “hiss” and not ish.

s before or after the broad vowels is like ss in the word “pass,” like s in “soon.” The demonstrative pronouns are exceptions to this rule, so and sud being pronounced show and shoot.

s following t- of the definite article is completely eclipsed and lost in pronunciation. In this particular way s is unique, all other aspirable consonants are aspirated in this position: an t-slat (un tillat) the rod.

sh s when aspirated, sh, the s is completely eclipsed and is not sounded, the aspirate h alone being heard, like h in “has”; shin (heen) stretched.

t t before broad vowels like tt in “matter”: tog (ttok) lift.

t preceding small vowels like ch in “cheer”: tim (cheem) time.

th th is like h in “him,” the aspirate h eclipsing the consonant t: thug (hook) brought; in the middle and end of a word it is generally silent: sith (shee) peace; leathan (llyä-ün) broad.
37. The combination of lingual consonants with labials and also g and ch is noted in that they interpolate an added vowel sound between them and one generally correspondent to the preceding vowel. Thus, the combinations lb, lch, lg, lm, lp, and so on, interpolate this distinct drawl vowel between them. falbh (faliiv); Alba (alabii); tilg (tchy lyk) etc. Similarly between the same groups of consonants when they come next each other in compound words, ban-mhaighstir (banavāshichyr) (par. 19).

38. The dentals d and t, and also s when followed by g tp m (i.e., sg, st, sp, sm) are not aspirated when they follow other words ending in a dental or lingual, an dorus, the door.

39. Diminutives in an sound it an, but plurals in a, an, or ean sound ü and ün: cnocan (krokan) a little hillock; dana (daniü) songs; brogan (brogün) shoes; preasa (prās-süü) bushes.

40. The broad sound of dh gh: it is not easy to learn this sound except by ear, but the following will be helpful in an endeavour to pronounce it. The gh in ugh is about the nearest we can get in English. This dh and gh—a highly explosive guttural—is produced by pressing the point of the tongue on the lower or upper gum and then forcing the breath against the roof of the mouth, without allowing the tongue to touch the back part of the mouth, or as if a short or inaudible u were sounded before the dh or gh. The sound of g in auger (a carpenter's tool) is also near our sound.

41. y final is used in the phonetics as representing the y sound heard final in "mighty" (mit-y); "gaudy" (god-y); "steady" (sted-y). Gaelic ex. cuiridh (koor-y); dachaidh (tach-y); bithibh (bpeehyv); bithidh (bpeehy).

42. In some of the phonetic key words it must be observed that the almost sameness of sound is all that is intended to be expressed, for the sound may be rather longer or rather shorter than that of the key word.
LESSON II.

VERB “To Be”; PRESENT INDEPENDENT TENSE.

43. The Gaelic verb always precedes the noun or pronoun and is not declined, being the same for all persons and numbers.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tha mi (ha mee)</td>
<td>I am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha thu (ha oo)</td>
<td>thou art.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha e (ha ā)</td>
<td>he is.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha i (ha ee)</td>
<td>she is.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha sinn (ha sheen)</td>
<td>we are.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha sibh (ha sheev)</td>
<td>you are.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha iad (ha eeít)</td>
<td>they are.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

44. Memorise the following vocabulary:

- an la (un ķá) the day.
- an duine (un doo-nű) the man.
- an gille (un geel ū) the boy.
- luath (llooū) swift, quick.
- fliuch (flooch) wet.
- blath (bplāh) warm.
- deas (jess) ready.
- an so (ün sho) here.
- an sin (ün sheen) there.
- an sud (ün shoeott) yonder.
- sgith (skee) tired.
- a nis (ű nysh) now.

45. When we make a statement about the subject of the sentence, the predicative adjective or adverb comes last in the sentence as in English.

Tha an gille fliuch, the boy is wet.

46. Read in Gaelic and translate the following:


47. Translate the following into Gaelic:

1. The man is wet. 2. I am ready. 3. He is tired. 4. We are warm now. 5. They are wet. 6. You are tired. 7. She is here. 8. The boy is swift. 9. He is here now. 10. He is ready. 11. The day is wet. 12. The man is here. 13. The boy is tired. 14. They are there now. 15. They are cold. 16. He is ready now. 17. You are quick. 18. We are cold now. 19. The day is warm.

48. As tha “is” always precedes its nominative, tha an la fuar literally means “is the day cold” as if asking a question. This position of the verb need not lead to confusion as we never use tha in that way. The meaning of tha never varies, it is always the sign of an affirmative sentence, and in translation follows its nominative.
LESSON III.

49. Verb “to be”; Paradigm of the Present Tense.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Independent</th>
<th>Dependent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tha mi (ha mee)</td>
<td>I am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am bheil mi? (âm vâl mee)</td>
<td>am I?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha 'n eil mi (chan vâl mee),</td>
<td>I am not.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach eil mi? (nach âl mee)</td>
<td>am I not?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma tha mi (mû ha mee)</td>
<td>if I am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur eil mi (mûr âl mee)</td>
<td>if I am not.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged a tha mi (ket ü ha mee)</td>
<td>though I am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged nach eil mi (ket nach âl mee)</td>
<td>though I am not.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu 'm bheil mi (kûm vâl mee)</td>
<td>that I am.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach eil mi (nach âl mee)</td>
<td>that I am not.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

50. As the verb is the same for each person in both numbers it is unnecessary to print the same words six times over. The learner has only to repeat the pronouns in their order after every temporal change of the verb.

51. It will be noticed that nach occurs twice with different meanings, but no ambiguity should occur, as, when it is the interrogative particle, it comes at the beginning of a sentence or clause, and when the relative negative it is in the middle and follows its antecedent.

52. “I am tired” simply is in Gaelic tha mi sgith; but “he says that I am tired—he is saying that I am tired” is rendered into Gaelic by tha e ag radh gu 'm bheil mi sgith, it is not tha e ag radh a tha mi sgith. Tha is only used in the direct present to make a definite and independent statement about the subject and bheil is employed when the verbs “am, art, is, etc.,” follow another verb upon which they are dependent, or when a question is asked or something is denied.

53. Bheil being the form used after the particles is always aspirated am bheil mi sgith? “am I tired?” Cha'n eil is used for cha bheil, bh is thrown out for euphony’s sake and an organic i is retained between cha and eil to prevent a hiatus.
54. The sign of the participle is **ag**, which becomes **a’** before all consonants except **radh**. The participle follows the subject.

55. When we wish to answer “yes” or “no,” we repeat the verb in the same tense as is used in the questioning sentence. The noun or pronoun is not required.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Am bheil an gille fliuch?} & \quad \text{is the boy wet?} \\
\text{Tha. Cha’n eil.} & \quad \text{he is = yes. he is not = no.}
\end{align*}
\]

56. Memorise these vocabularies as we have not space to repeat previous lists.

- **mall (maull)** slow.
- **crubach (kroobüch)** lame.
- **dachaidh (tach-y)** home.
- **a’ dol (ü dawl)** going.
- **a’ tighinn (ü cheeüin)** coming.
- **ach (äch)** but.
- **agus (ä-ghus)** and.
- **agu** (a’ dol) going.
- **an t-each (ün tchyüch)** the horse.
- **og (ogk)** young.
- **an diugh (ün joo)** to-day.

57. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:

1. Am bheil an la fuar?  
2. Cha’n eil an la fuar, tha e blath.  
3. Ged a tha e blath tha e fliuch.  
4. Tha an t-each crubach ma tha e mall.  
5. Nach eil an duine an sin a nis?  
6. Cha’n eil, tha e an so a nis.  
7. Mur eil an gille fuar tha e fliuch.  
8. Tha an gille an so an diugh.  
9. Tha an gille sgith, ach cha’n eil e fuar.  
10. Tha e ag radh gu’ m bheil e og, ach tha mise ag radh nach eil e.  
11. Am bheil thu ’dol dachaidh a nis?  
12. Cha’n eil, tha mi a’ dol do’n bhaile  
13. Am bheil iad a’ dol do’n bhaile?  
14. Tha i a’ tighinn dachaidh a nis.  
15. Nach eil an la blath?  

58. Now translate into Gaelic:

1. You are going to the town to-day.  
2. Are you not ready yet?  
3. No, he is ready, but I am not.  
4. The horse is ’ame to-day.  
5. It is not here yet.  
6. The boy is young.  
7. If the man is not wet he is cold.  
8. The day is warm.  
9. The horse is swift, but the dog is slow.  
10. Is the man not coming home?  
11. No, he is going to the town.  
12. You are not coming to the town to-day.  
13. The boy is cold and wet.  
14. If the man is not here the boy is here.  
15. Though the boy is not young.  
16. If the horse is not tired it is lame.  
17. She says (is saying) that the man is coming here, but they say (are saying) that he is not.  
18. Are you not going home now?
LES SSON IV.

59. Verb “to be”; Past Independent Form.

bha mi (va mee) I was. bha sinn (va sheen) we were.
bha thu (va oo) thou wert. bha sibh (va sheev) you were.
bha e, i (va ā, ee) he, she was. bha iad (va eeūi) they were.

60. For the English article “a” we have no equivalent in Gaelic. There is only one article in Gaelic—that which corresponds to the English “the”; as:—

Duine, a man. An duine, the man.

61. Tha and bha before an indefinite noun can take the meaning in English of “there is,” “there are,” “there was,” etc., as:—

Tha duine aig an dorus (torus) there is a man at the door.
Cha ’n eil duine aig an dorus,
Bha gille aig an dorus, there is not a man at the door.
there was a boy at the door.

62. Vocabulary.

co ? (ko) who ? na gilean (nū keelyūn) the boys
cu (koo) a dog. 'nuair (noonūr) when
na coin (nū ko-yn) the dogs. an de (un jā) yesterday.
na daoine (nū dōy-nū) the men. aig (āk) at.
aig an tigh (āk ʻn in tā y) at the house, at home.
an raor (ʻn rō-yr) last night ann (aunn) in; there.

63. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


64. Now translate into Gaelic:—

1. The horse was going to the town. 2. The boys were at the door last night. 3. There is a man coming to the town. 4. He was coming yesterday. 5. I was there last night. 6. The dogs were going home. 7. There was a dog at the door. 8. It was at the door to-day. 9. When it was here it was wet. 10. They were tired last night. 11. He was going home yesterday. 12. I was coming home when I was tired. 13. The horse was lame. 14. The dogs were here yesterday. 15. A dog was here, but the dogs were at home last night. 16. Who was here yesterday? 17. A man was at the door. 18. He was ready.
LESSON V.

65. Verb "to be"; Paradigm of the Past Tense.

Independent bha (va) was, wert, or were.
Dependent robh (ro) was, wert, or were.

bha mi (va mee) was.
an robh mi? (śni ro mee) was I?
cha robh mi (cha ro mee) I was not.
nach robh mi? (nach ro mee) was I not?
ma bha mi (mı́ va mee) if I were.
na'ń robh mi (mı́n ro mee) if I were.
mur an robh mi (mur śń ro meed) if I were not.
ged a bha mi (ket śń va mee) though I were.
ged nach robh mi (ket nach ro mee) though I were not.
gu'n robh mi (ķń ro mee) that I was.
nach robh mi (nach ro mee) that I was not.

66. All Gaelic verbs have a special form for use after the relative pronoun; but in the present and past tenses notice that we use the independent forms of the verb bi, i.e., tha and bha to follow the relative pronoun a, and the conditional particles ged and ma. In the future of the verb bi we have a special form for use after these as will be shown.

67. When the relative pronoun is nominative it precedes the verb and no other pronoun is necessary after it.

An duine a tha an so, the man who is here.
An duine a bha an sin, the man who was there.

68. To make our statement more emphatic, we add what we term an emphatic suffix to the pronouns. Thus we have

mi thu e i sinn sibh iad
mise thusa esan ise sinne sibhse iadsan

Ma tha thusa a' dol, tha mise a' dol, if you are going, I am going.

69. Nuair, literally an uair a, "the time that" = "the hour which" = "when," and really an adverbial phrase, generally written nuair a or simply nuair. The relative a, "that," being often omitted, as it often is in English.

70. Vocabulary.

leisg adj. (lāšk) lazy.
cailtte adj. (kāyl tchū) lost.
thubh airt irr. v. (hoo ńr{

anns a' phairec (auns ü fā yrk) in the park.
anns a' choille (auns ü choi yū) in the wood.
71. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. An robh an duine a'ig an dorus?  2. Cha robh e a'ig an dorus.  
5. Bha mi sgith.  6. An robh na gillean anns a' bhaile?  
9. Bha na coin luath ach bha iad crubach.  10. Nach robh iad anns a' phaire?  
15. Bha na coin caillte anns a' choille an de.  16. Thubhairt e gu'n robh e caillte anns a' bhaile an raoir.  
17. Mur an robh iad an sud an diugh, bha mise ann an de.  18. Na'n robh mi mall, bha mi leisg.  
22. Thubhairt e gu'n robh e a' dol dachaidh.

72. Now translate English into Gaelic:—
1. Was the horse in the park?  2. No, the horse was in the wood.  
3. Were the men at the door?  4. They were not at the door.  
5. A man was at the door last night.  6. Was he wet?  7. He said that he was not wet.  
8. They were in the wood last night.  9. The horse was there to-day.  
10. If it was there to-day it was not there last night.  11. The dogs were swift though they were lame.  
12. The day was wet.  13. We were tired last night.  14. He said if we were going home he was going to the town.  
15. Was he not slow?  16. No, he was quick.  17. The dog was lost in the wood last night.  
18. He says that the dog was lost in the town yesterday.  19. If I were lazy he was slow.  
20. We were cold in the park to-day.  21. Who was in the park yesterday?  22. I was not there.

LESSON VI.

73. Verb "to be"; Subjunctive Tense, Independent Form.

Singular.

1st. bhithinn or bhiom (vee-yam or vee-im)  I would be.  
2nd. bhitheadh tu (vee-ugh too)  thou wouldst be.  
3rd. bhitheadh e (vee-ugh e)  he would be.  

Plural.

1st. bhitheamaid or bhiomaid (vee-yom-adh)  we would be.  
2nd. bhitheadh sibh (vee-ugh sheev)  you would be.  
3rd. bhitheadh iad (vee-ugh eieit)  they would be.

74. The Subjunctive is the only tense in which any change takes place, and this in the first person singular and plural, in which the pronouns have become amalgamated with the verb. Also termed the imperfect, customary, or habitual past.

Bhithinn  I would be, or I used to be.
Vocabulary.

briste adj. (brees-tchü) broken. an sgian f. (ün skegün) the knife.
an-moch adj. (ünümoch) late. an unneag f. (oonyack) the window.

76. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

77. Now translate into Gaelic:—
1. I used to be quick but I am tired now. 2. You would be late in coming home last night. 3. The men would be home yesterday. 4. The dogs would be lame. 5. The horse would be slow coming home. 6. They would be tired. 7. I would be at home yesterday but I was at the town last night. 8. The knife would be broken. 9. It would be lost in the house. 10. The window would be wet. 11. It would be broken. 12. The boys would be in the wood to-day. 13. They would be wet. 14. I would be there if you were. 15. He would be in the park in the evening.

LESSON VII.

78. Verb "to be"; Paradigm of Subjunctive Tense.

Independent bhitheadh or bhiodh (vee-úgh) would be.
Dependent, bitheadh or biodh (vee-úgh) would be.

am bithinn (üm bee-yynn) would I be?
am bitheamaid (üm beeümatch) would we be?
am bitheadh e (üm beeügh å) would he be?
cha bhithinn (cha vee-yynn) I would not be.
cha bhitheamaid (cha beeümatch) we would not be.
cha bitheadh e (cha beeügh å) he would not be.
nach bitheadh e? (nach beeügh å) would he not be?
ná'm bitheadh e (nam beeügh å) if he would be.
mur bitheadh e (mür beeügh å) if he would not be.
bed a bhiteamaid e (ket ü beeügh å) though he would be.
ged nach bitheadh e ged nach bitheadh e ged nach bitheadh e
gu'm bitheadh e (küm beeügh å) that he would be.
nach bitheadh e (nach beeügh å) that he would not be.
79. In these dependent forms of the subjunctive notice that the verb is not aspirated after the particles am, an, nach, na'm, na'n, mur, gu'm, gu'n, ged nach, but that the initial of the verb is aspirated after cha and ged a. All verbs whose initial letter is an aspirable one are affected in this way in the subjunctive.

80. Vocabulary.

sgoil f. (sgoll) school.
anns an theasgar (auns ün es-gür) in the evening.
anns a' bhàta (auns ü vâlû) in the boat.
am maireach (ùm màrûch) to-morrow.

81. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

82. Now translate into Gaelic:—
1. Though the dogs would be there they would be tired. 2. It would be cold there. 3. We would be going though the men would be late. 4. I would not be tired if she would be there. 5. If I was there I would be warm. 6. He said he would be late to-morrow. 7. The window would be broken. 8. It would not be broken if you would be there. 9. He said they would be going to the town to-morrow. 10. Would they be going to the town in the evening? 11. Would it be warm in the town? 12. That man would be at the house last night. 13. When they were young they would be in school. 14. Would the knife not be broken? 15. It would be lost in the wood. 16. They would be in the wood last night. 17. Would I not be cold in the park? 18. You would not be cold in the park. 19. Would it not be wet in the wood? 20. He would be wet in the wood. 21. He said he would be ready and that he would be in the boat. 22. They said they would be at home to-morrow.
LESSON VIII.

83. Verb “to be”; Future Independent Tense.

1. bithidh mi, I shall or will be bithidh sinn, we shall be.
2. bithidh thu, thou shalt be. bithidh sibh, you shall be.
3. bithidh e, i he, etc., shall be. bithidh iad, they shall be.

(Pronounced pee-hee-mee).

84. The English auxiliaries “shall” and “will” when used to express future action are not translated into Gaelic; the Gaelic verb itself assumes a form suited to that meaning.

85. The past tense may be termed the narrative and the future the philosophical—the former describes what once happened and the latter describes what always happens.

86. Vocabulary.

an tuathanach (än tooanūch) the farmer.
an ciobair (än keepūr) the shepherd.
na h-eich so (nū hāch sho) these horses.
am bàta (üm bpatū) the boat.
dorcha (diorückū) dark.
air ball (är paul) immediately.
an nochd (än-nochk) to-night.

87. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


88. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. The shepherd will be here immediately.  2. The farmer was here yesterday and he will be here to-day.  3. These horses will be tired.  4. They will be coming home late.  5. They will be there now.  6. We shall be coming to the town in the evening.  7. You will be going to the town.  8. It will be dark immediately.  9. The boat was here last night and it will be coming to-day. 10. It will be here yet.  11. These horses will be going home now.  12. The boys will be lazy.  13. It will be cold to-day.  14. The farmer will be coming home immediately.  15. He is there now.  16. We will be going to the house to-morrow.  17. You will be going to-night.
LESSON IX.

89. VERB “to be”; PARADIGM OF THE FUTURE TENSE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Independent Future,</th>
<th>bithidh (peehee).</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dependent Future,</td>
<td>bi (pee).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative future,</td>
<td>bhitheas (veehüs).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- bithidh mi (peehee mee)  I will be.
- am bi mi? (üm pee mee)   will I be?
- cha bhi mi (cha vee mee) I will not be.
- nach bi mi? (nach pee mee) will I not be.
- ma bhitheas mi (mü veehüs mee) If I will be.
- mur bi mi (mür pee mee)  If I will not be.
- ged a bhitheas mi (ket ü veehüs mee) though I will be.
- ged nach bi mi (ket nach pee mee) though I will not be.
- gu'm bi mi (küm pee mee)  that I will be
- nach bi mi (nach pee mee) that I will not be.

THE RELATIVE PRONOUN AS NOMINATIVE.

90. The relative future is generally used only in the third person, except where an emphatic statement of existence is made, when we may say ’s mi a bhitheas “I will be (indeed).” Literally the form a bhitheas means “who will be,” and a bhitheas e “whom he will be.” For simple “he will be” the form is bithidh e. The relative pronoun a in all cases and tenses precedes the verb which it always aspirates. Bhios is a contracted form of bhitheas.

Am fear a bhitheas an so,  the man who will be here.
An gille a bhitheas an sin,  the boy who will be there.

91. Vocabulary.

oidhche (oichii) night.
am feasgar (üm fes-gür) the evening.
an earar (ün yär ür) the day after to-morrow.
leis (llāsh) with him, his.
anns (auns) in (before the).
gle (klā) very (aspirates the adj.).

92. These demonstratives are placed after the definite noun.

so (ško) this, these (near at hand—here).
sin (sheen) that, those (further away—there).
ud (oodt) yon (much further away—yonder).

Bha am fear sin an sin an raoir, that man was there last night.
(lit. : the man there was there last night).

93. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:

1. Ged a bhitheas e aig a’ bhaile an diugh, bithidh e anns a’ bhàta.
   anns an fheasgar.  2. An duine a bhitheas an-moch.  3. Am bi thu
94. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. I said he will be late. 2. Will he be here to-night? 3. He will not be here this afternoon, but he will be here in the evening. 4. I will not be with him. 5. Will he not be in the town to-day? 6. The man who will be in the town to-morrow. 7. I will be coming with him. 8. I will not be there to-morrow. 9. If the boy will be going with them they will be very late. 10. The boy will not be very quick. 11. He will be in the wood immediately. 12. Who will be with him? 13. The man will be ready immediately. 14. The man who will be ready will not be lazy. 15. He will be very tired when he comes home. 16. These boys will not be coming home to-day. 17. They said that they will be in the town to-morrow. 18. Though they will be in the boat to-day I will not be there. 19. If it will be wet in the afternoon we will not be going to the town. 20. I will be ready to-morrow. 21. Will you be going to the town the day after to-morrow? 22. Yes.

LESSON X.

95. Verb "to be"; Imperative Mood.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Per.</td>
<td><strong>bitheam</strong> (bee-ùm)</td>
<td><strong>bitheamaid</strong> (bee-ùmàch)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd ,</td>
<td><strong>bi</strong> (bee)</td>
<td><strong>bithibh</strong> (bee-vu)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd ,</td>
<td><strong>bitheadh e</strong> (bee-ùgh a)</td>
<td><strong>bitheadh iad</strong> (bee-ùgh eeùt)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

96. The formation of the persons in the imperative of this verb is according to the rules governing all Gaelic verbs. The 2nd person sing. of the imperative being termed the root of the verb. In the regular verbs all tenses can
be formed from the root either by affixing a termination, by prefixed a particle, or by aspiration (Lesson XL.)

97. The 2nd person sing. and plural is the order of command; no pronoun is necessary unless for further emphasis, when the emphatic pronoun thu-sa can be used, bi thu-sa.

98. The 1st and 3rd persons express a desire, whether purpose or request. The pronoun must be expressed in the 3rd person.

99. An imperative negative can be made by placing the imperative particle na in front of any verb in the imperative mood. This particle is reserved for, and can only be used to form, this imperative negative or imperative prohibition, as:—buail mi, strike me; na buail mi, strike me not. It does not cause aspiration. No other particles are used with the imperative.

100. The 3rd person imperative is very often used to translate the word "whether."

Bitheadh e 'na righ no 'na fhlath, whether he be a king or a prince
let him be a king or a prince.

101. Vocabulary.

lag-chridheach (lakchreeiich) faint-hearted.
treun (trän) adj. brave.
duinte (dtoontchū) adj. shut.
samhach (savuck) adj. quiet.
fosgailte (foskyltchū) adj. open.

102. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


103. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Let us be in the wood to-night. 2. Let the man be brave. 3. Don’t let him be faint-hearted. 4. Be brave. 5. Let them be with him in the wood to-morrow. 6. Don’t let the boys be quiet. 7. You be quiet. 8. Let us be brave. 9. Don’t let him be late to-night. 10. Let us be in the town to-night. 11. Don’t let the window be broken. 12. Let the window be opened immediately. 13. Don’t
let the door be shut. 14. Let us be ready this evening. 15. Let the
door be shut now. 16. Don’t let the knife be lost. 17. Don’t be
faint-hearted. 18. Let us be brave to-night. 19. Let me be with
him to-morrow. 20. Don’t let us be cold. 21. Be quiet.

LESSON XI.

104. **Verb “to be”; Recapitulatory.**

**General Exercise on the Verb bi.**

_Vocabulary._

'san lathair (sún lláir) present.  no or.
an drásd (án drast) presently, now.
bo, na ba (bpa) a cow, the cows.
air a’ mhonadh (áir ù vonúgh) on the hill.
anns an fhang (auns ún ank) in the pen.
na feidh (já-y) (the) deer (plural).
na caoraich (nu kó-rych) the sheep (plural).
anns a’ mhaduinn (vattynn) in the morning.
anns an achadh (auns ún achúgh) in the field.

105. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Tha na caoraich anns an fhang.  2. An robh iad air a’ mhonadh
an raoir?  3. Cha robh ach tha iad anns an fhang an drasd.  4. Bha
na ba caillte an de.  5. Bha na feidh anns a’ mhonadh am feasgar
so.  6. ‘Nuair a thainig e do ’n bhàta bha e sgith.  7. An uair a bha
iad og bhitheadh iad anns a’ bhaille.  8. Tha na gilleann a n so an diugh
ach cha robh iad an so an de.  9. Bhitheadh a’ tighinn dachaidh
an raoir.  10. Bhitheadh an uinneag briste.  11. Tha an dorus
14. Tha na h-eich so an sin a nis.  15. Am bheil an cu aig an dorus.
16. Tha e aig a’ bhàta.  17. Tha na ba anns an fhang ach bha iad
air a’ mhonadh an sud an de.  18. Bhitheadh anns a’ bhailte anns a’
mhaduinn am maireach.  19. Ma bhitheas e aig an tigh an nochd
bithidh mise an sin an drásd.

106. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. When I was in the wood yesterday the boy was not present.  2. He
will be here to-night or to-morrow.  3. The farmer was in the
town when I was there in the morning.  4. Is the window not broken?
No.  5. The dog is not in this field, it is on the hill.  6. There are
deer on the hill.  7. Were the men not here last night?  8. No, they
were in the boat.  9. Though you will not be ready I will be.
10. The deer were not in this field, they were on the hill.  11. These
boys were not in the boat.  12. When we were there they were not
present.  13. They will be there presently.  14. If the sheep are
not in the pen they will be in the field.  15. The shepherd was on
the hill.  16. Don’t let that stick be lost.  17. Let the window be
opened in the morning.  18. When the shepherd was there the
farmer was in the town.
LESSON XII.

IDIOMS.

107. An Idiom is an expression that has acquired by usage a certain meaning, which becomes lost in a word-for-word translation into another language; so that in order to convey the meaning in that other language the form of expression must be changed.

108. Thus *tha an leabhar aig an duine* is a Gaelic Idiom, for its sense is lost in a word-for-word English translation like "the book is at the man," and, in order to convey the true meaning, the English expression must be changed to "the man has the book."

109. Idioms constitute one of the chief difficulties in learning any language, and the student is recommended to master the few Gaelic Idioms which will now be introduced into these exercises.

110. These Idioms enter much into the spoken and written language and well deserve particular attention, for there is not a page written in which they are not to be found, nor can there be a single conversation without their use.

TO DENOTE POSSESSION.

111. VERB "*have*" BI WITH THE PREPOSITION AIG.

The verb "*have*" is in English generally an auxiliary verb, but it is not always such. When it is used in English to indicate "possession," it must be translated by the Gaelic verb *bi* along with the preposition *aig*, at. Thus "I have a book" becomes in this idiom "a book is at me," or "there is a book at me" or "to me," and similarly through all the pronouns. This is a somewhat similar idiom to the Latin form, "*est mihi liber,*" "there is a book to me," etc.

112. Such a sentence one might expect to be translated into Gaelic *tha leabhar aig mi,* "a book is at me." Instead, however, we use a combination of pronoun and preposition called a prepositional pronoun. Hence we write *tha leabhar agam.* (Prep. Pro. par. 404).
113. Observe that in this construction the subject of the English sentence becomes the object in Gaelic idiom. In *tha leabhar agam*, “I have a book,” *leabhar* is nominative to *tha* (and so comes after the verb), and not as in the corresponding English sentence “I have a book,” in which “book” is in the objective case. This order of the words holds good no matter how many subjects to the verb are introduced. They are all in Gaelic nominatives to *tha*, and in English objectives after “have.”

114. **Prepositional Pronouns formed from**

*aig* “at.”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><em>aig</em></th>
<th><em>mi</em> becomes agam (akūm)</th>
<th>at me  = I have.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>thu</em></td>
<td>agad (akiūd)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>e</em></td>
<td>aige (ākū)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>i</em></td>
<td>aice (āch-kū)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>sinn</em></td>
<td>againn (ak-ynn)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>sibh</em></td>
<td>agaibh (ak-yv)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>aig</em></td>
<td><em>iad</em></td>
<td>aca (ach-kū)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

115. Examples of the use of these prepositional pronouns:—

| Tha peann agad (agad-sa) | thou hast a pen. |
| Tha bo aige (aige-san)   | he has a cow. |
| Tha ad aice (aice-se)    | she has a hat. |
| Nach eil sgian aig a’ ghille? | has the boy not a knife? |
| Cha’n eil da leabhar aig a’ chaileig. | the girl has not two books. |
| Ged nach robh an t-airgiod aige an de, bithidh e aige am maireach, | though he had not the money yesterday he will have it to-morrow (though the money was not at him yester-day it will be at him to-morrow). |

116. These pronouns, *agam*, etc., denote possession but do not necessarily signify ownership, take this example: *tha tigh aige*, “he has a house,” which means that he possesses a house which may or may not be his own, i.e. he may be only a tenant. (par. 184).

117. And the idiom which thus expresses our relation to our material property is also used to express our relation to our immaterial properties, or bodily and mental activities, which are in some way subject to our control.

| Tha fuath agam da (fooū) | I hate him = hate is at me to him. |
| Tha truas agam ris (trooūs) | I pity him = I have pity for him. |
| Tha gaol agam (gōll) | I love  = I have love. |
But I cannot say \textit{tha tinneas agam}, "sickness is at me," when I mean to tell you that "I am sick." Sickness is generally outside our control and is looked on as an infliction which comes "on us," as will be shown.

118. \textit{Vocabulary.}
\begin{itemize}
  \item an \textit{leabhar} (\textit{än llyo-ūr}) the book.
  \item aig \textit{a' chailleig} (\textit{āk ù challyk}) nf. at the girl.
  \item peann (\textit{pyawnn}) nm. a pen.
\end{itemize}

119. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
\begin{enumerate}
  \item Am bi bo agam.
  \item Bithidh bo agam agus cha bhi bo agad-sa.
  \item Ged nach eil bo agad.  
  \item Ma bhiteas bo aice.
  \item Tha peann aige.
  \item Tha tigh agad.
  \item Nach eil sgian agam?
  \item Tha an leabhar agam agus tha leabhar aig a' chaileig.
\end{enumerate}

120. Translate into Gaelic:—
\begin{enumerate}
  \item I have a horse.
  \item He has a house.
  \item Has he not a house?
  \item We have a horse and a dog.
  \item He had a dog but he has not it now.
  \item We have a cow.
  \item Have you a hat?
  \item I have not a hat now.
  \item I pity him.
  \item Has he not the book?
  \item He had the book yesterday.
  \item He has not a knife to-day.
  \item You had the knife last night.
  \item We had the dogs on the hill but the cow was in the pen there.
  \item There it is now.
  \item You will have a cow to-morrow.
  \item Will the farmer have a cow to-day?
  \item Will the girl have that book now?
  \item I have the book to-day, the boy will have it to-morrow, and the girl will have it the day after.
  \item The man had it last night.
\end{enumerate}

\textbf{LESSON XIII.}

\textbf{THE VERB "TO WANT" = "TO NEED."}

121. In a similar idiomatic manner the English verb "to want," with a wish or desire "to have," is translated. The verb \textit{bi} is used in all its tenses with the preposition \textit{o} or \textit{ua} "from," or the prepositional pronouns formed therefrom.

122. Prepositional pronouns formed from \textit{o}, \textit{bho}, "from."
\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{uam} (oo-ūm) or \textit{bhuam} (oo-ūm) from me.
  \item \textit{uait} (oo-acht) or \textit{bhuat} (oo-acht) from thee.
  \item \textit{uaithe} (oo-åy-hū) or \textit{bhuaithe} (oo-åy-hū) from him.
\end{itemize}
Examples of their use:

1. Tha leabhar uam, / I want a book (a book is from me).
2. Tha sgian uait, / you want a knife (a knife is from you).
3. Ciod tha uait? / what would you have?
4. De tha uaithe? / what does he want?
5. Tha uam thu bhi sona, / I want you to be happy.
6. Tha uam e a bhi agad, / I want you to have it (to be in possession of it).
7. Uam na agam e / whether it is mine or not (from me or to me).
8. Tha an t-airgiod sin / we want that money now.
9. Tha uam a bhi ann, / I want to be there.
10. Tha thu ri bhi ann, / you are to be there.
11. Tilg uait an sgian sin. / throw from you that knife.
12. Cha chomasach le duine an ni nach bitheadh aige a thoirt uaithe. / It is impossible for a man to give away what he does not possess. (lit. It is not possible for (with) a man the thing which would not be with (at) him to give from him.)

Vocabulary.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cuan</td>
<td>m. (kooún) an ocean.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aig an iasgair</td>
<td>āk ūn y askūr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an trath so</td>
<td>adv. (uín tra sho) just now.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seumas</td>
<td>(shāmūs) James.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an t-airgiod</td>
<td>(uín tiārygytt) the money.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c'úine a?</td>
<td>(koon-ū) when? (what the time that?).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

5. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:


6. Translate into Gaelic:

1. Throw from you that book. 2. James wants the hat to-day. 3. Do you want the money? 4. I want that money now. 5. You want to be there to-morrow. 6. What does she want? 7. She wants a hat. 8. What would he have? 9. He wanted a book but he will not have it now. 10. Did he not have a book yesterday? 11. He had a book yesterday but he wants it to-day. 12. Whether it is his or not. 13. He wants this book the day after to-morrow.
LESSON XIV.
The Verb "To Know."

127. The English verb "know," is translated by the Gaelic noun fios "knowledge," and is used in the idiomatic form illustrated in the preceding lesson. Tha fios aig (ha feess aik) "to have knowledge" (knowledge is at).

128. We use fios when the verb "know" means "to recollect," "to be aware of," "to be sensible of," or when we ask or give information or intelligence, etc. It is always used when "know" is followed by "who, what, where," or other dependent clause.

Tha fios aig na thubhairt e, you know what he said.
Tha fios agad gu de thubhairt e. I know where he was.
Tha fios agam far an robh e. you know in what place he was.
Tha fios agad c'aite an robh e. she knows who is at the door.
Tha fios aig na thubhairt e. do you know when he comes?

Am bheil fios agad na thubhairt e, do you know if he has a boat?
Am bheil fios agad gu de thubhairt e. I do not know (there is no
Tha fios agad far an robh e. knowledge at me).
Tha fios agad c'aite an robh e. If he did not know where the
Tha fios aig na thubhairt e. boat was, how did he know
Tha fios agad gu de thubhairt e. that you had it? (If
Tha fios agam far an robh e. knowledge was not at him
Tha fios agad c'aite an robh e. where the boat was, etc.)

Cuin' a fhuir th u fios?

Bheir mi fios, Little do I know.
Is beag fios dhomh-sa,

129. In the same construction aithne is the "knowledge" by which we "recognise" or "acknowledge acquaintance," "to know by sight" a person, place or thing, etc.

An aithne dhuit an leabhar so? do you know this book (by sight)?
Cha'n eil aithne agam air, have you heard of this book?
An aithne dhuit Domhnull? = I have no knowledge of it.
Cha'n eil aithne agam air, I know it (lit. there is know-
An aithne dhuit Domhnull? ledge at me on it=of it).
Cha'n eil aithne agam air, do you know Donald?

130. When "to know" means to be well versed in the subject or well acquainted with it—to know a fact; that a thing is: to know by heart; we use eolach (volach).
Am bheil thu eolach air an leabhar so?  
Am bheil thu fada eolach air Domhnull?  
Tha mi fada eolach air Domhnull,  
An robh thu eolach air an tir bhur n-eolais?  
Tha e ‘na dhuine eolach

do you know (all) this book?  
do you know Donald well? (are you long acquainted with Donald?)  
I know Donald well (I am long acquainted with Donald).  
did you know him in your own country (lit.), were you acquainted with him in your own country?  
he is a man well acquainted.  
he is an intelligent man.

131. Vocabulary.

Co aig am bheil? (ko åk um vål) who at whom is = who has?  
co aig an robh? (ko åk un ro) who had?  
toilichte (tolychtchü) adj., pleased.  
coig (kö-yk) nu. adj. five.  
tasdain (tasttian) nf. shillings.  
gu cinnteach (goo keenn-ichach) adv. certainly.  
an uiridh (ün oor-y) adv. last year.  
dhomh, dhuít (gouv, gootch) to me, to you.

132. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


133. Translate English into Gaelic:—

1. Do you know (aithne) this book? 2. I do not know it. 3. I have not that book. 4. Have you not this book? No. 5. Who had it? 6. James had the book yesterday. 7. I want that book. 8. The fisherman has not a boat now, but he will have it to-morrow. 9. I hadn’t five shillings. 10. The boy has not the knife. 11. Who has it? 12. Do you know who had it? 13. I know the girl had it last night. 14. Do you know if the farmer has the money now? 15. I know that he will not have it. 16. Will he have it to-morrow? 17. Yes, certainly. 18. Do you know if he wants a horse? 19. Do you know if that man has a dog? 20. I do not know if he has a dog now, but he had a dog last year. 21. Do you know the shepherd well? 22. I am well acquainted with him. 23. He is an intelligent man. 24. He was at the house yesterday. 25. Was he there this morning?
LESSON XV.

IDIOMS OF THE VERB bi, bi with air.

134. The use of the verb bi with the preposition air "on," and the prepositional pronouns formed from it is also the cause of several peculiar idiomatic forms of expression.

135. The things which are ours we keep as near us as we can; they are the things "at us"; but there are things that come "to us" not by any act of ours, but against our will; they are visitations, they come "to us" from without and probably from the Unseen. In Gaelic idiom these involuntary visitations are said to be "on us." Hunger, thirst, sickness, sadness, fear, joy, death, in fact any state, quality, feelings or sufferings which affect the body, mind or soul, are expressed in Gaelic as being a burden laid upon the individual or sufferer.

136. Thus "I am thirsty" becomes in this idiom "thirst is on me"; "are you angry?" "is anger on you?" etc.*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ciod e a tha ort?</td>
<td>what ails thee? (what is it that is on thee).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha gradh agam ort-sa,</td>
<td>I love thee (love is at me on you).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha bron mor oirnn,</td>
<td>we are very sorrowful (great sorrow is on us).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha am fiabhras air,</td>
<td>he has the fever (the fever is on him).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha eagal oirre,</td>
<td>she is afraid (fear is on her).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha an t-acras air,</td>
<td>he is hungry (hunger is on him).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bha iongantas air an duine,</td>
<td>the man was astonished (astonishment was on the man).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na biodh eagal ort,</td>
<td>be not afraid (let not fear be on thee).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

137. The same idiom applied to money betokens debt. The fact that "I owe John money" or that "I am under any obligation to pay money to John" is expressed by saying, "John has money on me," the preposition air being used before the name of the debtor, and the act of "having" being expressed by tha and aig as in the previous lesson. "I owe John a hundred pounds" is translated according to idiom, "John has a hundred pounds on me,"

* It is because Gaelic has no primary adjectives for a number of these terms that the noun is used in this idiom. Where primary adjectives are available they are used. Tha mi tinn. I am sick.
tha ceud punnd Sasunnach* aig lain orm. (lit. there is a hundred pounds at (of) John on me).

Tha deich tasdair agam air that man owes me ten shillings (lit., an fhear sin, I have ten shillings on that man).

138. The following are the prepositional pronouns formed from air:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prepositional Pronoun</th>
<th>English Equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>air mi</td>
<td>becomes orm (or-üm) on me.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air thu</td>
<td>„ ort (orst) on thou.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air e</td>
<td>„ air (ār) on him.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air i</td>
<td>„ oirre (orrū) on her.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air sinn</td>
<td>„ oirnn (orynn) on us.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air sibh</td>
<td>„ oirbh (or-yv) on you.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air iad</td>
<td>„ orra (orrū) on them.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

139. **Vocabulary.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic Word</th>
<th>English Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>adhaircean</td>
<td>(öyarkün) horns.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slat (sliáht)</td>
<td>a rod.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ciód ? (kut) de?</td>
<td>(jā) what?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cluas (klooós) ear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu trath (kootra)</td>
<td>soon.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fhuair (kooür) got.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an d’fhuair ... ?</td>
<td>(un dooür) did . . . get?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>breac (bpréach)</td>
<td>a trout.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sporan</td>
<td>a purse.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>damh (dāv)</td>
<td>a stag.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air na h-eildean</td>
<td>(ār nū hāldjen) on the hinds.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>punnd (poont)</td>
<td>pound.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arbharr (arrarr)</td>
<td>corn.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uaireadair (oo-ār-ūtūr)</td>
<td>watch.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lion (leen)</td>
<td>a net.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ag iasgach (ak y ūskūch)</td>
<td>fishing.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

140. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


141. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. That horse is lame. 2. Did the man not know that his horse was lame? 3. He did not know. 4. James has a purse. 5. We had a rod and a net when we were fishing. 6. I did not know that the sheep were in the corn. 7. Was it not very warm when you were in town? 8. It was. 9. Are you going fishing to-day? 10. Yes. 11. I do not know if he has a watch. 12. Have you not a watch? 13. James has a watch now. 14. Was the boy not hungry? 15. He was not hungry but he was very tired. 16. The man was very astonished.

* Punnd Sasunnach (£1) pound sterling. Sasunnach (from Eng. Saxon—Lowlander) is generally placed after punnd when money is inferred.
17. He was afraid. 18. I was astonished. 19. There are no horns on the hinds but the stag has horns. 20. The man was hungry. 21. I got a pound from the girl. 22. She will be home soon. 23. What ails her? 24. She has the fever. 25. He loves her. 26. They were hungry last night. 27. Did they get home last night.

LESSON XVI.

The Particle ann.

142. The verb bi with the particle ann is used to denote existence, the particle ann generally coming last in the phrase, or forming the chief portion of the predicate. In this position it is adverbal, and is equal to the English locative adverb "there." The verb bi denotes existence connected with locality; ann serves to strengthen it in that meaning.

143. This combination of bi and ann is always used in this sense to express the phenomena of nature. Thus in the sentence—"The showers were heavy," something is stated about the showers, but their existence is not questioned, so in Gaelic this is simply bha na frasan trom, but if the sentence ran "there were heavy showers," it is simply a statement that they existed, and the sentence would be bha frasan trom ann.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tha aran air a' bhord, Am bheil aran ann? Cha'n eil im ann, Tha fuachd ann an diugh, Tha e fuar an diugh, Nach bithinn ann na's mo, Ciod a tha ann?</td>
<td>there is bread on the table. is there bread? there is no butter. &quot;it is cold to-day&quot; (there is coldness to-day). &quot;it is cold to-day.&quot; &quot;That I should not be any more&quot; (That I should not be (in existence) there any more). &quot;what is it?&quot; (what is that there (in existence) or what is that there that exists). &quot;there is a river&quot; (a river is there). &quot;are you there? John.&quot; &quot;he is a good man&quot; (it is (he) a good man that is there).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha abhainn ann, Am bheil thu ann? Iain, Is e duine math a tha ann,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

144. In all these phrases ann agrees in meaning with the English adverb "there," in such phrases as "there are," "there was," "there exists," etc., in which the adverb originally signified location "in that place," but now also
expresses mere existence. It is not difficult to account for this transition.* To be able to say that a thing is in a certain place is to give an emphatic assurance that it exists; and hence the localising statement has become the statement of existence. Instead of saying "a road is" or "exists," we say "there is a road." In English "there" in this sense always precedes the verb, but in Gaelic the verb always precedes the adverbial particle ann.

145. **Ann** as a preposition governs the dative case of nouns and means "rest in."

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Ann an tigh,} & \quad \text{"in a house."} \\
\text{Ann an t-soitheach,} & \quad \text{"in the town."}
\end{align*}
\]

146. **Ann** after a verb of motion means "motion in" and "into," and governs the dative case.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Cuir uisce ann an t-soitheach,} & \quad \text{put water into the dish.} \\
\text{Cuir an t-airgiod ann an sporan,} & \quad \text{put the money into the purse.} \\
\text{Tha an t-iasg a' snamh ann an uisce,} & \quad \text{the fish is swimming in the water.} \\
\text{Chaidh e ann an laigse,} & \quad \text{he went into a faint (he fainted)}
\end{align*}
\]

147. **Ann** as a prepositional pronoun, meaning "in it," "in him" (201).

Cha'n eil ann ach Sasunnach, "he is but an Englishman" (lit., there is not in him but an Englishman).

148. **Vocabulary.**

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{abhainn (avynn)} & \quad \text{nf. a river.} \\
\text{fras -an} & \quad \text{nf. shower, -s,} \\
\text{iasg (eũsk)} & \quad \text{nm. fish.} \\
\text{im (eem)} & \quad \text{nm. butter.} \\
\text{chaidh (high)} & \quad \text{went.}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{muir (moor)} & \quad \text{nm. sea.} \\
\text{uisge (ooshkũ)} & \quad \text{nm. water, rain.} \\
\text{bord (bawrd)} & \quad \text{nf. a table.} \\
\text{aran} & \quad \text{nm. bread.} \\
\text{cuir (koor)} & \quad \text{put.}
\end{align*}
\]

149. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:


150. Translate into Gaelic.

1. There is a boat on the river. 2. There is a man in the boat. 3. The man had bread and butter on the table. 4. There is bread on

* Dr. Bain's Higher English Grammar.*
the table, but there is no butter. 5. There are fish in the river.
6. There was rain last night. 7. It was cold and wet yesterday.
8. The showers were heavy last night. 9. It rains now. 10. If we
had bread we would not be hungry. 11. Are you there? 12. Is
that you? (lit. Is it you that is there?) 13. It will rain to-morrow.
14. It is wet to-night. 15. There is rain now.

LESSON XVII.

The Assertive Verb is.

151. You have already been introduced to the verbs
tha and bheil. We have a third verb which is also used to
translate into Gaelic the English verb "am, art, is, are."

152. This verb is is, pronounced like "iss" in the English
word "hiss." It serves to express a simple assertion, to
connect an attribute with its subject, to predicate one thing
of another, as:—is mise an treoraiche, "I am the guide."
An treoraiche here is the attribute of mise, or is predicated
of mise by the verb is. Tha denotes a qualified existence; i.e., in relation to time, place, or some qualifying con-
dition. Is denotes simple existence without reference to
anything else whatsoever. Examples of both verbs are
given in the following sentence, which the student would do
well to analyse—is mise a tha ann, "It is I who am there—
in a certain place—here."

153. The verb is is generally used impersonally. In
such cases a neuter pronoun subject is contained in the
verb, so that the noun or pronoun that follows it is not a
subject but a predicate; when the latter is a definite or
proper noun it will be a double predicate. Thus: is mise,
"it is I"; is tusa, "it is thou"; is e Seumas, "it is (he)
James." Being an emphatic and assertive verb, the
emphatic pronouns are generally used.

154. This is a defective verb, having only a present
tense is, and a past tense bu. But they enter into many
combinations and idiomatic clauses along with a noun and
preposition, verbs and adverbs, as:—Is urrainn do, can;
is leir do, see; is coir do, ought; is tu bhios sona, 'tis you
who will be happy: is gorm a dh' fhas e, green did it grow.

155. There is no dependent form in either the present or
past tense. In the present tense, after the particles, the
verb is is omitted and only the particles remain, but the idea is as distinctly conveyed as if the verb had been expressed; as, *cha mhi*, "it is not I."

Present Tense.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verb</th>
<th>particle</th>
<th>particle</th>
<th>particle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>is</td>
<td>it</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>is mi</td>
<td>it is I or I am.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>is tu</td>
<td>it is thou.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>is e</td>
<td>it is he, it.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an</td>
<td>is it?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am mi</td>
<td>is it I?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am tu</td>
<td>is it thou?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha</td>
<td>it is not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha mhi</td>
<td>it is not I.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha tu</td>
<td>it is not thou.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha’n e</td>
<td>it is not he.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach</td>
<td>is it not?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma’s</td>
<td>if it is.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur</td>
<td>if it is not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged a’s</td>
<td>though it is.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged nach</td>
<td>though it is not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gur</td>
<td>that it is.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach</td>
<td>that it is not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Past Tense.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verb</th>
<th>particle</th>
<th>particle</th>
<th>particle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bu</td>
<td>it was.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bu mhi</td>
<td>it was I or I was.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bu tu</td>
<td>it was thou.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b’e</td>
<td>it was he, it.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am bu</td>
<td>was it?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am bu mhi</td>
<td>was it I?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am bu tu</td>
<td>was it thou?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha bu</td>
<td>it was not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha bu mhi</td>
<td>it was not I.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha bu tu</td>
<td>it was not thou.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha b’e</td>
<td>it is not he.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach bu</td>
<td>was it not?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na’m bu</td>
<td>if it was.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur bu</td>
<td>if it was not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged bu</td>
<td>though it was.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged nach bu</td>
<td>though it was not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu’m bu</td>
<td>that it was.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach</td>
<td>that it was not.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

156. In the past tense *bu* causes aspiration of words immediately following:—*bu mhi*, "it was I"; *bu mhór am bonnach*, "the cake was large"; but words beginning with a *d* or *t* are not aspirated—*bu tu*, "it was thou"; *bu dalma*, "'twas impertinent." *Bu* loses its vowel when followed by a vowel—*b’e*, "it was he"; *biad*, "it was they"; *b’urrainn domh*, "I could."

**Where the verb is must be used.**

157. The verb *is* is used when both subject and predicate are definite; when in the English sentence the verb "to be" is followed by a definite noun, i.e., (a) a proper noun; (b) a common noun with the definite article; (c) a common noun with a possessive pronoun; (d) or by a pronoun predicate.

(a) *is e* Seumas | *is (he) James.*
(b) *is tua* an righ | *you are the king.*
(c) *is tua* mo mhathair | *you are my mother.*
(d) *is mise e, is e so,* | *I am he, it is this.*

158. The rule is:—The verb *tha* cannot predicate a definite noun or its equivalent. We can say (1) *Tha e ’na righ* for "He is a king"; but we cannot say (2) *Tha e an*
righ for "He is the king." No. (2) expresses an absolute and definite identity, an assertion which can only be expressed by is.

159. Note another rule:—The verb is cannot be followed immediately by either a definite or a proper noun. Usage has determined that in addition to pronouns, only indefinite expressions such as adjectives and indefinite nouns should follow immediately after is.

160. In these last examples we have a personal pronoun as the subject. If we have a definite noun or its equivalent as subject, it will be a double subject, as it requires a corresponding personal pronoun to follow is. "Malcolm is the king" becomes Is e Calum an righ. Observe the introduction of the pronoun in accordance with rule noticed in preceding paragraph.

Is e Iain am fear (fer), John is the man.
Is iad na fir (fyr) so iad,* these men are they.
Is e Inbhirnis an t-aite, Inverness is the place.
Is i so a' bhean (ven), this is the woman.
Is e Dia mo bhuachail, God is my shepherd.

* Observe the phenomenon of the double pronoun here which is an exact application of the preceding rule; also consider
Is e so e, this is he.
Is (e) duine math e, he is a good man.
Is e baile an righ mhoir e, it is the city of the great king.

161. Notice that in these expressions the pronouns following is are not in the emphatic form. These pronouns are merely temporary subjects, and the emphasis caused by is is carried on to the words following is e, is i, or is iad. The verb is is always in a state of dependence or decay, and has a tendency to become contracted or to vanish altogether; hence we find occasionally So tigh Sheumais, instead of Is e so tigh Sheumais (par. 464).

162. We must use is when both subject and predicate are indefinite nouns, either of which may have an adjective attached. These sentences generally signify species or class. Note that in these sentences the rule is to place an indefinite predicate immediately after the verb, so that we may term them "inverted sentences." A few examples will explain. In saying that "a hen is a bird," we mean that it is of the bird species or class,
Is iasg breac,  
Cha' n iasg cearc, 
Is eun cearc, 
An eun cearc? 
Is saor e, 
An gille fear? 
Is duine mise, 
Is la fuar e so, 

*a trout is a fish.*
*a hen is not a fish.*
*a hen is a bird.*
*is a hen a bird?*
*he is a joiner.*
*is a man a boy?*
*I am a man.*
*this is a cold day.*

163. Generally we use *is* when an assertion is made which admits of no idea of doubt (or condition as to locality), or when in case of contrast one is selected before others. Hence *is* is used to point out the comparative and superlative of adjectives, because contrast is pointed out with certainty.

164. What has been said of *is* applies of course to its past tense *bu.* A similar remark may be made of *tha* and *bha.*

165. **Vocabulary.**

- **lain** (eeûn) John.
- **Calum** (callûm) Malcolm.
- **mathair** (ma-ûr) mother.
- **athair** (a-ûr) father.
- **saor** (sôr) nm. a joiner.
- **eun** (ân) nm. a bird.
- **gual** (gooûl) nm. coal.
- **dubh** (dûoh) adj. black.
- **cat** (kaht), nm. a cat.
- **mo, m’** (mö) my.
- **righ** (ree) nm. a king.
- **cearc** (kyark) nf. a hen.

166. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. An e so cu?  2. Is e so cu.  3. Is e sin cat.  4. Is e sin gual.  

167. Now translate into Gaelic:—

1. Though it is a dog it is swift.  2. Is a trout a fish?  3. A bird is not a fish.  4. A hen is a bird.  5. This is a hen.  6. That is a cat.  7. Yonder is a dog.  8. It was the boy who was here.  9. Is this the boy?  10. That is John.  11. Is it not Malcolm?  12. If it was the boy who was here last night he is not lame.  13. I am the man.  14. You are not the man.  15. He was the boy.  16. Was it not the hen that he had?  17. It was not the boy who was here.  18. John is a man.  19. A trout is a fish.  20. That is the king.  21. This is the man.  22. These are the horses.  23. John is the king.  24. Is this coal?  25. Is not coal black?
LESSON XVIII.

APPLICATION OF IS AND THA.

168. As there is a peculiar distinction in the application of these two verbs *is* and *tha*, a few more examples will be helpful.

169. As we have seen in previous exercises, we must examine carefully a sentence containing any part of the verb "to be" before we translate. We have given examples where the verb *is* must be used and the verb *tha* cannot be used. In some of the sentences we had in the earlier exercises, where we used *tha* we can also use *is*, but with a slightly different meaning, as we hope to illustrate by example.

170. An indefinite noun or adjective in predicate.

*Tha e 'na fhìr,*  
*he is a man (in his man).*
  
*Tha an la fùar,*  
*the day is cold.*

Now we can also use the verb *is* here, and say *is fear e,*  
*is fùar an la.* Notice that up to this the order of the words in our Gaelic sentence has been (1) verb, (2) nominative case, and (3) predicate, which may be a noun, adjective, or a phrase which followed the English verb. When we use *is* this order is changed, and we always have the predicate when it is an indefinite noun or an adjective coming immediately after *is,* and uniting with it in making an assertion. We cannot say *is e fear,* because *fear* is an indefinite noun predicate, and according to rules comes immediately after *is.*

171. The position of the adjective modifies the sense and structure of the sentence, as in the following example:—

*Is fùar an la so,*  
*this day is cold.*
  
*Is la fùar e so,*  
*this is a cold day.*

This last example is somewhat analogous to what is sometimes heard in English, "'Tis a cold day this."

172. We have shown that *tha* means "is now"; it also implies a state, quality, condition, or location, and *is* means "is always," implying kind, species, impression, and comparison. Thus if you say to me *is fear e,* your assertion
means to me that "he is a man" = "he is a real man," every inch a man, not a woman, an animal, or a coward. If we see a figure approaching, and you tell me is fear e as soon it is made out that it is a man, you will use is fear e correctly. But if you say tha e 'na thear "he is a man" = "he is in his man," here I take you to mean a very different thing, that "he is now a man," no longer a boy, having grown up to be a man, and is now in his quality of "manhood." Tha e 'na mhinistear, "he is a minister," means that he is now a minister, after his studying he has become "a minister" and "is now" in his quality of minister.

173. All this is very important, because if there is any idea of a change of state in the mind, we cannot use is. If we wish to convey the idea that a person or thing has become what he (or it) is, and that he or it was not always so, we must use the verb tha. And the verb tha must in such construction be always followed by the preposition ann and a suitable possessive pronoun, as tha e 'na thear, "he is in his man(hood)" (Lesson xxxv.)

On the other hand the preposition ann is not necessary when the predicate is an adjective, as, tha e fuar, "he is cold," for the simple reason that the adjective itself denotes posture and local condition equivalent to an adverbial phrase, "Cold = in cold."

**Tha + Preposition + Noun.**

174. Whenever in English the verb "to be" is followed by a preposition tha is the verb to use. This follows from the nature of the prepositions, for when we say a thing or someone is "at a place," "on a place," "from a place," etc., "is" always means "is now," or has reference to a state or condition. Again, when we talk about the weather or any thing that is changeable, "is cold," "hot," etc., we mean that it "is now" hot, cold, etc., and use tha.

175. **Vocabulary.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bronach</td>
<td>adj. sad.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ard (ardt)</td>
<td>adj. tall, high.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>laïdir</td>
<td>(lá tch ür) adj. strong.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Exercise.

176. Use the verb *is* and *bu* in the following sentences in place of *tha*, and translate both sentences.

1. Tha e 'na fhear. 2. Tha an la fuar. 3. Tha mi 'nam shaor. 4. Tha thu bronach. 5. An robh an la fuar? 6. Cha n'eil an la fuar.
10. Tha an gille arach cha n'eil e laidir. 11. Bha na h-eich so sgith.

---

Lesson XIX

**is** and **tha** in question and answer.

177. When asking a question thus: we use *tha*

De tha so?  what is this?  Co tha sin?  who is that?

When a statement would be made in answer to these questions or in answer to the question, **an e so?** "is it this," we use the verb *is*.

Is e so cu,  this is a dog.  Is e sin Calum,  that is Malcolm.

When a question has been asked by using one of the dependent verbs *bheil* or *robh*, the answer must be made with the independent forms *tha* or *bha* or the negative *cha'n eil* or *cha robh*.

Am bheil thu a' dol?  are you going?  Tha,  I am =yes.

An robh thu sgith?  were you tired?  Bha,  I was =yes.

178. When answering "yes" or "no" to questions asked by the verb *is*, or by any of the particles which have the force of this verb but do not suffer it to be expressed, we use the verb *is* to reply, supported by the predicate of the questioning sentence repeated in the answer; the verb *is* cannot stand alone as *tha* does; it must always be supported by a pronoun.

An e so?  is it this?  Is e sin,  it is that =yes.

An e an duine?  is he the man?  Is e,  he is =yes.

Co e?  who is he?  Is e Calum,  he is Malcolm.

An e clachair a tha annad?  are you a mason?  Cha'n e,  I am =yes.

Nach e Seumas a tha ann?  isn't that James?  Cha'n e,  it is not =no.
179. **Seadh (is + eadh) = “that’s it” or “’tis so.”**

We have already illustrated *tha* and *cha’n eil*, and *is e* and *cha’n e* as the common answers equivalent to “yes” and “no” in English. There is, however, another question form taking for answer **seadh** *(shōgh)* “it is so” and **cha’n eadh** “it is not so.” The question is usually made by the interrogative negative **nach**? “is not?” followed by an adjective. This pronoun **eadh** is a survival of an old neuter form.

- Nach milis am bainne so?  
  *is this milk not sweet?*
- Nach fluch an la a tha ann?  
  *isn’t it a wet day?*
- Nach fearail e?  
  *isn’t he manly?*
- Nach modhail sin?  
  *isn’t that polite?*
- Is fearail an duine e.  
  *manly the man he is.*

**The Verb is with the Particle ann.**

180. The combination of the verb **is** with the particle **ann** gives us a decisive emphatic form, an emphasis which is not conveyed by the English translation. The verb **is** emphasises the words immediately following it; combined with **ann** it is rendered still more emphatic. **Is ann** is generally used to express indignation, surprise, or impression. **Is ann** may be literally translated “it is,” “there is,” “it has happened,” “occurred.”

- Is ann air an duthaich a thainig an da la,  
  *what a change has come over the country.*
- Is ann mar sin a bha e,  
  *it happened thus (like that).*
- Is ann leis a thig iad,  
  *it is with him they will come.*
- B’ ann mar sin a thachair,  
  *it was in that way things happened.*
- Is ann aige tha fios,  
  *it is he who knows.*
- B’ ann as an aite sin a thainig e  
  *he came from that place.*
- Is ann gu bronach a tha e,  
  *he is very sorrowful.*
- Is ann daibh aithne bualadh,  
  *they know how to thresh.*
- Is ann an sin a bhitheas sinn,  
  *it is indeed there we shall be.*
- An aite seasamh is ann a theich iad,  
  *instead of standing they fled. (lit. in place of standing keeping their ground, it happened they fled.)*
- B’ ann air eigninn a thair e as,  
  *it was with difficulty he got off (lit. there was or it occurred that by difficulty he came out of it or escaped).*
- Is ann uaithe so a tha e tachairt,  
  *thus it happens (lit. it is from him thus that it is happening).*

It will be observed that **is ann** is most frequently used
before adverbs or adverbial phrases or clauses. The idioms are difficult in some of the examples shown, too difficult to be introduced at this stage.

181. **Vocabulary.**

- trom adj. (trowm) heavy.
- idir adv. (y tch ār) at all.
- loch nm. (lawch) a loch.
- bainne nm. (bpan-nyu) milk.
- teine nf. (tchānū) a fire.
- clachair nm. (clachūir) a mason

182. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


183. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Is he the man?  2. He is not the man at all.  3. I am the boy.  4. Was I not the boy?  5. He was the man.  6. Thou art the man.  7. Is not this water?  8. No, it is milk.  9. It was wet last night and it rains now.  10. They are not heavy showers.  11. It is wet to-day.  12. I am hungry and there is no bread in the house.  13. Had he the fever last night?  14. Is John not going home?  15. Are you going?  16. Were you tired yesterday?  17. I was not tired.  18. I would have been tired.  19. Were you the man?  20. Is it this man?  21. That's he.  22. John was the boy.  23. He wasn't.  24. Is this the bread?  25. That's not it at all.  26. There is bread on the table.  27. This!  28. That's it.

___

**LESSON XX.**

**Idioms of the Verb bi—is with le.**

184. We have already seen how "possession" is translated by the verb tha, with the prepositional pronouns formed from aig, "at." To describe "absolute possession or ownership" we use the verb is. "The book is John's" is translated "the book is with John." Here "is with" has the idea of being permanently connected with, as a thing is with the owner, so the verb used is is not tha. Note also the order of words in the Gaelic sentence when we use the verb is. First, the verb, which is followed by the
adjective or noun which in English followed the verb, and last, the nominative case of the English sentence.

185. *Is le lain e*, "it is John's"; *is le Mairi an leabhar so*, "this book is Mary's"; but in such a sentence as "the book is mine," we do not translate *is le mi an leabhar*, but use a prepositional pronoun formed from *le mi*, which becomes *leam*. The following are the prepositional pronouns formed from *le*, "with."

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prepositional Pronoun</th>
<th>Gaelic Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>le mi</em></td>
<td><em>leam</em></td>
<td>with me, mine.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le thu</em></td>
<td><em>leat</em></td>
<td>with thou, thine.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le e</em></td>
<td><em>leis</em></td>
<td>with him, his.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le i</em></td>
<td><em>leatha</em></td>
<td>with her, hers.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le sinn</em></td>
<td><em>leinn</em></td>
<td>with us, ours.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le sibh</em></td>
<td><em>leibh</em></td>
<td>with you, yours.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>le iad</em></td>
<td><em>leotha</em></td>
<td>with them, theirs.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

186. This prepositional pronoun can be used with more emphasis thus:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>is leamsa</em>,</td>
<td>&quot;it is mine&quot; (it is with me)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>is leinne</em>,</td>
<td>&quot;it is ours&quot; (it is with us).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

187. As illustrating the difference in meaning of *aig* and *le*, picture a banker handling his cash and saying—*tha airgioid agam ach cha leam fein e*, "I have money, but it is not my own." *Tha agam* shows that the money is in hand; *cha leam*, "not with me," indicates the person’s right to it. *An le Seumas an leabhar so?* "Is it with James this book?" = "Does this book belong to James?" *Is leis e*, "It is with him" = "It does"; *Bu leis e*, "It was with him" = "It did."

188. The interrogative possessive pronoun "whose" is translated into Gaelic in the form "whom with," *co leis*, as :—*co leis an leabhar so?* "whose is this book" (idiomatic —whom with the book this) *leamsa*, "with myself = mine." *Co* with a pronoun asks a question without the verb is being expressed, *co e?* "who is he?"; *Co iad?" who are they?" (par. 456).

189. **Vocabulary.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>reic</em> (rāchh)</td>
<td>sold.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>cheannaich</em> (chyannych)</td>
<td>bought.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>im sailtse</em> (eem sāltchū)</td>
<td>salt butter.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>clach</em> (klach)</td>
<td>nf. a stone.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>abhag</em> (āvūk)</td>
<td>a terrier.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>im ur</em> (eem oor)</td>
<td>fresh butter.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>mor</em> (mōr)</td>
<td>big, large, great.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
190. Read in Gaelic and translate the following:—


191. Translate into Gaelic:—


LESSON XXI.

THE VERB bi AND THE COMPOUND TENSES OF ALL VERBS.

192. With the exception of the verb* bi, no Gaelic verb has a present time tense.† The present tense of all Gaelic verbs is composed of the verb bi and a verbal noun which is translated by the English present participle. A com-

* Many of the future forms of both regular and irregular verbs might be used for present time, but particularly the verb chi “I see” or “will see”—chi mi sin I see that (par 513).

† In English, the regular verb has only two different forms to express time, thus I love, I loved; all the other tenses are formed with the help of auxiliaries.
pound tense may be used to refer to an action whether present, past, or future, active or passive.

193. These compound tenses are formed thus—"She sings a song" becomes in Gaelic idiom "she is at the singing of a song," Tha i a' seinn orain.

194. When used in the present, to express an action progressing, as "singing," "going," "running," etc., the verbal noun is preceded by ag, "at," the g of which is dropped before all consonants, except in the case of radh and retained before all vowels, as:—ag radh (iig ra), "saying" a' dol (ü dawl), "going"; ag iarraidh (iig keer-y), "asking."

195. When used in the past to express a completed action, as—"sung," "spoken," etc., the verbal noun is preceded by the preposition air, "after," and thus the sentence, "she has sung a song" becomes in this Gaelic idiom "she is after the singing of a song," tha i air seinn orain.

196. When a noun follows these participles or verbal nouns it is put in the genitive case. Orain here is the genitive case of oran, and means "of a song." "Of" coming between two nouns is not translated, the inflection of the genitive noun is a sufficient indication.

197. Thus a whole series of compound tenses of an active signification may be formed by the use of the verbal noun, preceded by the prepositions ag and air and the verb bi in all its inflections, as:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Gaelic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tha e a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he is going home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha e air dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he has gone home (he is after going home).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bha e a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he was going home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bha e air dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he had gone home (he was after going home).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bhitheadh e a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he would be going home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bhitheadh e air dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he would have gone home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bithidh e a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he will be going home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bithidh e air dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he will have gone home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bitheam a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>let me go home.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am bheil e a' dol dachaidh?</td>
<td>is he going home?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cha'n eil e a' dol dachaidh,</td>
<td>he is not going home.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

198. When the personal pronoun is the object of a progressive participle in English, as "he is striking me";
it is translated by a combination of the corresponding possessive pronoun and the preposition. Such combinations may be called prepositional possessives.

199. Thus, the possessive pronouns mo, do, a, ar, ur, an, or am, along with the preposition aig "at" give us

'gam, 'gad, 'ga, 'gar, 'gur, 'gan,
at my. at thy. at his. at our. at your. at their.

200. Thus we have "he is striking," tha e a' bualadh; but "he is striking me" i.e., "he is at the striking of me" tha e 'gam bhualadh* (he is at my striking). "He is breaking stones," "he is at the breaking of stones," tha e a' bristeadh chlach; but "he is breaking them," tha e 'gam bristeadh (he is at their breaking).

201. These possessives along with the preposition ann "in," give :—

am, ad, 'na, 'nar, 'nur, 'nan,
in my. in thy. in his. in our. in your. in their.

Ann is used to denote a state or condition :—

Bha mi am* shuidhe, I was sitting (I was in my sitting).
Tha e 'na laighe, he is lying down (in his lying down).
Bha na fir 'nan suidhe, the men were sitting.
Tha e 'na *dhuine, he is a man (lit. in his man).

202. In the same relation and in the same order of construction, the preposition air is used to express a completed action; and gu (contracted g') to express a purpose.

Tha e air mo bhualadh, he has struck me (he is after my striking).
Bha an tuathanach air a bhualadh, the farmer had struck it.
Chaidh e gu m' *bhualadh, he went to strike me.
Thog e lamh g'am bualadh, he raised a hand to strike them.

203. When the possessive pronoun or prepositional pronoun preceding a verbal noun agrees with its nominative noun or pronoun in person and number, the sentence assumes a passive signification.

* The possessive pronouns which aspirate their nouns when used in their simple form aspirate in these combinations also. (par. 409).
Bha e a' togail na cloiche, he was lifting the stone.
Bha a' chlach 'ga togail, (the stone was at its lifting), the stone was being lifted.
Bha e 'gam bhualadh. (he was at my striking), he was striking me.
Bha mi 'gam bhualadh, (I was at my striking), I was being struck.

204. Exercises.

Vocabulary.

bristeadh (bpréistchúgh), breaking. ceannach (kyannúch) buying.
breabadh (bprapúgh)† kicking. an eich (un āch) of the horse.
bualadh (boolúgh) striking. a' choin (ú choyn) of the dog.
reic (ráckh) selling. leis a' ghille (lásh ú yillú) by

togail (tokiil) lifting. the boy.
a' charbad-iarruinn (ú charápúit eeúrýnn) the train.

205. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


206. Translate English into Gaelic:—

1. I have bought these sheep this afternoon. 2. Have you bought the dog to-day also? 3. No. I had bought it last night. 4. Are you going home now? 5. I am going to the train immediately. 6. When are you going home? 7. I am selling these sheep to-day and I will be home to-night. 8. Has the train not gone away now? 9. No, but it is going presently. 10. Has the boy broken that window? 11. I do not know. 12. The window was broken last night. 13. The boy had struck the horse this morning. 14. It had kicked the dog yesterday. 15. I was lifting the stone. 16. The stone was being lifted by the boy.

* Pron: ù ghall-úv. 1 lla yú. 2 lláv.

† a + dh or gh. In the case of adh or agh, after the sound of a = modified ð the dh or gh comes in very much like the momentary sound of a teaspoonful of gargle in the throat—a gargle sound.
LESSON XXII.

THE ARTICLE.

207. There is no indefinite article in Gaelic:—

\[ \textit{duine}, "a man." \quad \textit{daoine}, "men." \]

Notice that the indefinite article is also omitted in the English plural, where the absence of the "a" or any form of it serves exactly the same purpose as the presence of it in the singular.*

208. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

In English we say:—"the man"; plural, "the men."

In Gaelic we say:—\textit{an duine}; plural, \textit{na daoine}.

\textit{an} and \textit{na} we may call the primary forms of the article.

It is declined for gender, number and case as follows:—

\begin{align*}
\text{masc. sing.} & \quad \text{fem. sing.} & \quad \text{plural.} \\
\text{Nom.} & \quad \textit{an, am, an t-, an, a', an t-, na} & \quad "\text{the}" \\
\text{Gen.} & \quad \textit{an, a', an t-, na, na h-, nan, nam} & \quad "\text{of the}" \\
\text{Dat.} & \quad \textit{an, a', an t-, an, a', an t-, na} & \quad "\text{(to) the}" \\
\end{align*}

209. The \textit{n} of the article becomes \textit{m} before nouns with initial \textit{b} \textit{f} \textit{m} and \textit{p} as—\textit{am fear}, "the man"; \textit{am bátá}, "the boat"; \textit{am maireach}, "to-morrow."

210. The article causes aspiration in certain cases. The \textit{n} then drops out and its elision is marked by an apostrophe (\'), as:—\textit{a' bhean}, "the wife"; \textit{a' ghille}, "of the boy."

211. When the article follows a preposition ending in a vowel it is the \textit{a} that is dropped and its place taken by an apostrophe (\'\textit{n}) as—\textit{do' n righe}, "to the king"; \textit{o'n tigh}, "from the house." In cases where the \textit{n} would be dropped before an aspiration, and the \textit{a} after a preceding vowel, the \textit{n} is retained and the \textit{a} is dropped, as—\textit{do'n mhaic}, "to the son."

* The absence of the indefinite article in Gaelic is not unique; in other languages, notably Greek, there is no indefinite article; French plurals all require an article; but Latin again has no articles at all. The Latin \textit{filius viri} may mean "a son of a man," "a son of the man," "the son of a man," or "the son of the man."
212. In translating the English possessive case noun we use in Gaelic the noun in the genitive. This genitive noun, in which "of" is an understood component part, comes after the noun it qualifies and defines. The qualifying genitive noun only can take the article before it, even though both nouns may have a definite signification. When a possessive pronoun is used before the qualifying noun, the definite article is excluded altogether. The absence of an article from either noun in Gaelic does not signify that both nouns are indefinite (see example 3).* A definite compound noun takes the article before the first element of the compound (par. 298, 9).

lamh a' ghille, the hand of the boy
lamh mo ghille, the hand of my boy
lamh gille, the hand of a boy,
solus-greine, sunlight,
solus na greine, the light of the sun,
an solus greine, the light of the sun,

213. If an adjective simple or qualified precedes the noun, the article is placed before the adjective. The article so placed is subject to all the modifications, and aspirates the adjective as it would a noun beginning with the same letters.

An droch dhuine, the bad man.
am fior dhroch dhuine, the truly bad man.

214. The article is used before a noun when followed by the demonstrative pronouns so, sin, ud: an tigh so, "this house"; an cnoc ud, "yonder hill"; when the noun is preceded by is and bu, and an adjective: is math an t-each e "he is a (the) good horse"; and between the interrogatives, co, cia, ciot, and the noun: co am fear? "what man?" (lit.: who (is) the man).

215. The article is frequently used before abstract nouns, and nouns which represent their class or kind; as an leisg,

* I have stated it in this way, as it is more correct than to say, like Gillies and others, "that one noun governs another in the genitive." Whose "hand"? the "boy's" hand; it might be anyone's hand, and so we qualify and govern the noun "hand" by "boy's" instead of the reverse being the case. A compound illustrates this point even more so (par. 295). It is incorrect to say as Gillies does that both nouns are indefinite in the absence of any article (Gillies 179).
"laziness"; an duine, "man" (signifying mankind); before names of certain countries; as an Eadailt, "Italy"; an Roinn-Eórpa, "Europe"; an Fhraing, "France"; Eachdraidh na h-Alba, "History of Scotland."

216. As the vagaries of the article are many, we will, in order to fully describe and illustrate all its combinations, decline it with the noun. As already shown, the article changes according to case, number, gender, and the initial letter of the noun which it qualifies. We will divide the nouns into four groups in order to illustrate all these changes.

Group 1.—All nouns beginning with d, t; l, n, r; sg, sm, st, sp.
Group 2.—All nouns beginning with b, c, g, f, m, or p.
Group 3.—All nouns beginning with s followed by l, n, r, or s followed by a vowel.
Group 4.—All nouns beginning with a vowel.

217. The Article for Nouns in Group 1.

All nouns beginning with d, t, l, n, r; sg, sm, st, or sp.
In this group no alteration or addition is made, and the article remains in its primary form. The final lingual n of the article prevents aspiration of initial d or t of a noun or adjective immediately following it; the lingual termination and dental initial letters blending into each other naturally. Initial l n r never show aspiration in any position (pars. 21, 38).

ramh (m) an oar.
N. an ramh, the oar.
G. an raimh, of the oar.
D. an ramh, the oar.
N. na raimh, the oars.
G. nan ramh, of the oars.
D. na raimh, the oars.

spog (f) a claw.
an spog, the claw.
a na spoige, of the claw.
an spoig, the claw.
a na spogan, the claws.
nan spog, of the claws.
a na spogan, the claws.

218. The Article for Nouns in Group 2.

Nouns beginning with b f m p and c and g. Masculine nouns in this group aspirate in the genitive and dative singular; feminine nouns aspirate in the nominative and dative singular. The n of the article drops out before the aspirated consonant in these cases and an apostrophe takes its place ('). Before c and g in the nominative singular
masculine and the genitive plural the article an and nan is pronounced with a g sound attached to it, as—an cu (ung-koo) the dog; nan gleann (nung-glaunn) of the glens.

*gille (m) a boy. clach (f) a stone. bard (m) a poet. poit (f) a pot.*

N. an gille. a' chlach. am bard. a' phoit.
G. a' ghille. na cloiche. a' bhaird. na poite.
D. a' ghille. a' chloich. a' bhard. a' phoit.
N. na gillean. na clachan. na baird. na poitean.
G. nan gillean. nan clach. nam bard. nam poit.
D. na gillean. na clachan. na baird. na poitean or poitibh.

Observe that in the nominative singular masculine and in the genitive plural, both masculine and feminine, the n of the article changes to m before bf m and p.

219. In nouns beginning with f, both mas. and fem., the article an is retained in full before aspiration as the fh which follows is silent and thus there is no harsh sound to break down, an fhras, pronounced un rass.

*fear (m) a man. fras (f) a shower.*

N. am fear, the man. an fhras, the shower.
G. an fhir, of the man. na frosie, of the shower.
D. an fhrear, the man. an fhois, the shower.
N. na fir, the men. na frasan, the showers.
G. nam fear, of the men. nam fras, of the showers.
D. na fir, the men. na frasan, the showers.

220. **The Article for Nouns in Group 3.**

Nouns beginning with sl, sn, sr, or s, when followed by a vowel. Nouns in this group add a t- in the genitive and dative singular masculine, and in the nominative and dative singular feminine. No change in the article takes place in the plural. The s is always silent after an t-.

*sruth (m) a stream. slat (f) a rod.*

N. an sruth, the stream. an t-slat, the rod.
G. an t-srutha, of the stream. na slaithe, of the rod.
D. an t-sruth, the stream. an t-slat, the rod.
N. na sruthan, the streams. na slatan, the rods.
G. nan sruth, of the streams. nan slat, of the rods.
D. na sruthan, the streams. na slatan, the rods.

221. **The Article for Nouns in Group 4.**

All nouns beginning with a vowel. Masculine nouns in this group add a t- in the nominative singular; feminine
nouns take an **h**- in the genitive singular; and nouns of both genders take an **h**- in the nominative and dative plural.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nouns</th>
<th>Gender</th>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Examples</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>an t-athair</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>the father.</td>
<td>an abhainn, the river.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an athar</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>of the father.</td>
<td>na h-aibhne, the river.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an athair</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>the father.</td>
<td>an abhainn, the river.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na h-aíthriscean</td>
<td>n.</td>
<td>the fathers,</td>
<td>na h-abhnicean, the rivers.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nan athair</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>of the fathers.</td>
<td>nan abhainn, of the rivers.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na h-aíthriscean</td>
<td>n.</td>
<td>the fathers.</td>
<td>na h-abhnicean, the rivers.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

222. In declining the dative case, always say **air a’ ghille** or **do ’n ghille**, “on the boy” or “to the boy,” **do na gillean**, “to the boys,” and so on for the other nouns. The dative case always requires a preposition before it, as it expresses no terminational variety of meaning in either number without it; any other simple preposition may be used, as: **aig, as, de, fo, mu, o**, etc. (par. 594).

223. **Questions on the Article.**

If you can answer the following questions correctly it will be a guide as to whether you have understood the different forms of the article. The answers are to be found in the preceding two pages, but we will give a further definitive answer in the key.

1. Why is **abhainn** with the article not written **an t-abhainn**?
2. Why is **bard** with the article not written **an bard**?
3. Why is **an duine** written and not **a’ dhuine**?
4. Why **a’ chlach** and not **an clach**?
5. Why **an saoghal** and not **an t-saoghal**?
6. Why **an spog** and not **an t-spog**?
7. How do we translate into Gaelic the indefinite article “a” or “an” before an English noun?
8. How do we translate “of a father,” “to a father,” “on a father.”

224. **Exercise on the Article.**

Apply the Article to the following nouns:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nouns</th>
<th>Gender</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ann am báta</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>in a boat.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>báta</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(bpátu), a boat.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bean</td>
<td>f.</td>
<td>(pen), a wife.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bord</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(bawrd), a table.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buird</td>
<td>(boord)</td>
<td>of a table.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>long</td>
<td>f.</td>
<td>(lonk), a ship.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>luinge</td>
<td>(loomngu)</td>
<td>of a ship.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>saoir</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(söyr), of a joiner.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leabhar</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(liyo-úir), a book.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bruachan</td>
<td>(bprooúchún)</td>
<td>banks.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>each</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(ách), a horse.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fiadh</td>
<td>m.</td>
<td>(feúgh), a deer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eich</td>
<td>(éeech)</td>
<td>horses.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>feidh</td>
<td>(fá-y)</td>
<td>of a deer.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ord, m. (awrd), a hammer.
uird (oortch), of a hammer.
lorg, f. (lorük), a track.
luirge (loorrü), of a track.
mac, m. (machk), a son.
mic (meechk), of a son.
fear, m. (fer), a man.
fir (fyr), of a man.
air creig (är kräg), on a rock.
slat, f. (sllaht), a rod.
slaite (slatinü), of a rod.
slatan (slätün), rods.
le slait (le slätch), with a rod.
cu, m. (koo), a dog.
air cat (är cáht), on a cat.
facal, m. (fächkül), a word.
taobh, m. (töö), a side.
lamh caileige (láv kaliäkü), a girl's hand (the hand of a girl).
ceann eich (këdäw üch), the head of a horse (a horse's head).
ceann circe (këdäw heer-ü), a hen's head (the head of a hen).
casan gille (kassün keel-ü), a boy's feet (the feet of a boy).
casan thaidh (kassün eëugh), the feet of deer.
bun craobhbe (poon krövü), a root of a tree.

cas, f. (käss), a foot.
air cois (är koys), on a foot.
do righ (dtö ree), to a king.
air luing (är looynk), on a ship.
air craobhan (är krövün), on trees.
muice, f. (mooychkü), of a pig.
iasg, m. (eëusk), a fish.
eisg (äshk), fishes.
lamh, f. (lláv), a hand.
laimhe (lláyvü), of a hand.
sgian, f. (skeëün), a knife.
sruth, m. (swoo), of a stream.
srtha (sroou), of a stream.
air sruth, on a stream.
le laimh (le lláyv), with a hand.
eun, m. (ään), a bird.
eoin (joyn), birds.

guir (käür), sharp.
a' seinn (ü shäynn), singing
tapaidh (tahpü), clever.
raimh (ra-üv), oars.

Vocabulary.

225. Correct the article, etc., in the following sentences, read and translate:

1. Bha an lamh a' chaileige dubh. 2. Cha robh am gille. laird.
3. Bha na gille flüich. 4. Cha 'n eil an báta air an cuan, tha e air an sruth. 5. Cha 'n eil a' gille an so fathast, ach tha an caileag.
6. Tha an ceann an t-eich dubh. 7. Tha an ord an fir sin trom. 8. Tha an ceann a' ord trom. 9. Cha 'n eil na gilleann ans am baile.

227. Translate the following into Gaelic:

1. The son of the joiner is very clever. 2. Have you the rods. 3. No, the shepherd has them. 4. The book of the boy is on the table. 5. The father of the girl is at the town. 6. He was at the house of the fisherman. 7. Have you been at the house of the shepherd? 8. Do you know where the boy's knife is? (the knife of the boy). 9. If it is not at home it is lost. 10. The men in the boat have the oars. 11. Do you know where they are? 12. The men had them last night.
13. Were they singing on the river last night? 14. The birds were singing in the trees on the banks of the river. 15. Who was King of Scotland? 16. The boy's knife was sharp. 17. The man had a boat at the side of the river to-day. 18. I was at the side of a stream last night.
LESSON XXIII.

THE NOUN.

228. There are only two genders in the Gaelic language, the masculine and feminine; all Gaelic nouns therefore are either masculine or feminine gender. To know and remember the gender of ordinary Gaelic nouns is one of the great difficulties in learning the language, as it is in learning French and many languages. Without this knowledge, which can only be mastered by practice, no one can speak or write Gaelic correctly.

229. There are a few general rules which will very much help the learner to distinguish the gender of nouns; they are only general rules, however, subject to many exceptions; and where they do not apply, the student must depend on practice and memory.

230. The following nouns are usually masculine:—

(1) The names of males—fear, a man; torc, a boar; righ, a king.

(2) The young of all animals regardless of sex—uan, a lamb; searrach, a foal.

(3) Diminutives in an—bordan, a little table; lochan, a little loch.

(4) The names of trees, vegetables, grains, liquors, colours, metals, elements, the seasons, and the days of the week—calltuinn, hazel; cal, kail; leann, ale; iarunn, iron; uisge, water; samhradh, summer.

(5) Derivatives in as, ear, air, iche, etc. cairdeas, friendship; taillear, a tailor; piobair, a piper; maraiche, a seaman; marcaich, a ride; oibriche, a worker; aoradh, worship; bualadh, striking.

231. The following nouns are usually feminine:—

(1) Names of females—caileag, a girl; caora, a sheep; muc, a pig.

(2) Names of countries—Alba, Scotland; Eire or Eirinn, Ireland.
(3) Names of musical instruments, heavenly bodies, diseases—piob-mhor, the bag-pipes; clarsach, a harp; reul, a star; grian, a sun; siataig, rheumatism; teasach, fever.

(4) Diminutives, etc. in ag and achd—duanag, a little song; murlag, a small creel; morachd, greatness; bardachd, poetry.

(5) Derivatives in "e," denoting attributes—doille, blindness; buidhre, deafness.

232. The Gaelic noun has two numbers—singular and plural. Note that after certain numerals the singular is used, as after aon, one; fichead, twenty; ciad or ceud, a hundred; mile, a thousand; and any multiple of these. The plural is used after all other numbers.

233. The Gaelic noun has five cases, nominative and accusative, genitive, dative, and vocative. Practically speaking the Gaelic noun has only two forms, some feminines have three.

234. The nominative and accusative (or objective) case are alike in Gaelic. The nominative case is used when any person or thing is mentioned as the subject word of the sentence, or when it is the object word, and is directly governed by the action of the verb. There is no accusative case in Gaelic different from the nominative.

235. The genitive case in Gaelic corresponds to the English possessive case, or to the English noun preceded by the preposition "of." Thus "a man's hand" becomes "the hand of a man"; "of a man" being translated by the genitive of "man." The genitive is generally used as a qualifying and limiting term to and after another noun.

236. The dative case is the case where the noun is governed by a preposition and corresponds to the indirect objective case in English.

237. When the noun represents the person or thing spoken to, we call its case the vocative or the nominative of address. It is usually preceded by the vocative particle a, which causes aspiration of all aspirable consonants. (par. 254).
238. The Gaelic noun has been variously divided into declensions. Sometimes in two—a noun whose vowel is broad is said to be of the first declension as—*bard,oran*, etc. A noun whose last vowel is narrow is classed as of the second declension, as—*mir, ceist*, etc.

239. The most general manner of forming the genitive singular of nouns of both these declensions is to insert an *i* before the last broad vowel of the nominative singular, and when this is not done we may say the noun is partly irregular and falls under some of the rules to be given hereafter for the formation of the genitive. The division of the noun into declensions seems unnecessary, as there is scarcely any variation in the manner of declining nouns either in broad or narrow vowels.

240. It will be observed that the various inflections in the genitive singular constitute the principal guide in classification. If different forms of the genitive singular are a sufficient reason for a separate declension, a survey of the various formations of that case as classified in this work will enable the reader to discover at once that no fewer than fifteen declensions should be adopted—a division that would confer no benefit whatever; it will be found that ninety per cent. of the Gaelic nouns follow in some manner the general rule, and that, after forming the genitive singular a close uniformity of flectional formations pervades all the other cases.

241. The general rule for forming the genitive singular of both masculine and feminine nouns is to introduce an *i* after the last broad vowel of the nominative singular, or by leaving out the broad vowel or diphthongal part and substituting *i*. If the last vowel is *i* no change takes place; feminine nouns also add a terminal *e*. Many classes of nouns have special variations in the genitive, on account of their vowel combinations; examples of most of these are declined on the following pages.

242. A noun declined with the definite article we call a definite noun, a noun without the article we call an indefinite noun.
Declining the Indefinite Noun.

243. After forming the genitive a close uniformity of all ectional formations pervades all the other cases of Gaelic nouns. It will be found that in an indefinite masculine noun the nominative, accusative and dative singular are alike; the genitive plural is usually formed by aspirating the nominative singular; while the nominative, accusative and dative plural are the same as the genitive singular; the vocative is like the genitive singular, but aspirated; and the vocative plural is like the nominative singular and a final a added, or like the nominative plural aspirated.

244. In the case of indefinite feminine nouns, the nominative and accusative are alike; the dative with the omission of the final e is the same as the genitive; the nominative accusative and dative add an (and ean to correspond to a preceding small vowel) to the nominative singular; the genitive plural and the vocative singular are like the nominative singular aspirated; and the vocative plural is like the nominative plural aspirated.

Declining the Definite Noun.

245. The declension of a noun with the definite article is similar to that without the article. The initial letters of some nouns are aspirated in certain cases, others eclipsed, etc. (Lesson xxii.).

246. A definite noun has no vocative case.

247. A definite noun masculine beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the genitive and dative singular. A definite noun feminine aspirates the nominative, dative, and vocative singular.

248. A definite noun, whether masculine or feminine, beginning with d, l, n, r, s, t, aspirates no case.

249. A definite noun, whether masculine or feminine, beginning with a consonant is never aspirated in the plural.

250. As we have already dealt fully with the definite article with the noun, a further two examples will suffice to compare the changes effected by their combination.

251. Any unaspirated case is subject to aspiration after words which cause aspiration, as:—mo bhord, "my table"; mo bhuird, "of my table."
252. **Examples to illustrate the General Rule.**

**An Indefinite Masculine Noun.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th></th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>bard, a poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>baird, poets.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>baird, of a poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>bhard, of poets.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>(air) bard on a poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>(air) baird, (on) poets.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>bard, a poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>baird, poets.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Voc.</td>
<td>a bharda, oh! poet!</td>
<td></td>
<td>a bharda, oh! poets!</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**With the Definite Article.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>am bard, the poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na baird, the poets.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>a' bhard, of the poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na baird, of the poets.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>a' bhard, the poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na baird, the poets.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>am bard, the poet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na baird, the poets.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**An Indefinite Feminine Noun.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>brog, a shoe.</td>
<td></td>
<td>brogan, shoes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>broige, of a shoe.</td>
<td></td>
<td>bhrog, of shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>(air) broig, (on) a shoe.</td>
<td></td>
<td>(air) brogan, (on) shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>brog, a shoe.</td>
<td></td>
<td>brogan, shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Voc.</td>
<td>a bhrog, oh! shoe!</td>
<td></td>
<td>a bhrogan, oh! shoes!</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**With the Definite Article.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>a' bhrog, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na brogan, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>na broige, of the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td>nam brog, of the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>a' bhroig, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na brogan, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>a' bhrog, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td>na brogan, the shoes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

254. The vocative case is the same in the singular of masculine nouns as the genitive aspirated; and in the feminine nouns as the nominative aspirated; and in the plural of all nouns as the nominative plural aspirated, but minus the final n where the noun has had a syllable added to it to make the plural. The vocative case is preceded by the sign a, which is omitted before a vowel or an f aspirated.

255. The old dative plural for a number of nouns, both masculine and feminine, added ibh or aibh to the nominative singular, and this termination is still used more or less in poetry, or to give touch of dignity to serious writing.

- Air bharraibh nam biodag, on the points of the dirks.
- Fo chasaibh nan namh, under the feet of the enemies.

256. There are a few exceptions to all these rules, as in the case of duine, "a man," nominative, dative, and genitive are alike; daoine, "men," nominative and genitive
plural are also alike; also bean, "a woman," an altogether irregular noun, is mna in the genitive singular and bhan in the genitive plural (par. 282).*

Nouns Declined according to the General Rules.

257. Monosyllabic and many other nouns whose vowels are broad (a o u or ua) form their genitive after the manner of the preceding general rules.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Laogh m. (llőgh), a calf.</td>
<td>laogh laoigh</td>
<td>laoigh laoigh</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bruach f., a bank.</td>
<td>bruach bruachan</td>
<td>bruach an bruachan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns similarly declined.

adag† f. (aadtak) a stook.
ad m. (ál) a brood.
Albannach m (allupanuch) a Scotsman.
bàd m. (pádt) a tuft.
balach m. (bpllluch) a boy.
bàs m. (bás) death.
biodag† f. (bpydtak) a dirk.
bodach m. (bpodtuch) an old man.
bonnach m. (bponeech) a bannock.
cal m. (kál) a cabbage.
caol m. (köll) a strait.
cat m. (kált) a cat.
clar m. (klart) a plain.
clusa f. (kloóús) an ear.
craobh f. (króv) a tree.
cuan m. (kooiin) a sea.
cul m. (kooll) a back.
dan m. (dáin) a song.
dorus‡ m. (dorús) a door.
dos m. (tos) a tassel.

duan m. (dooún) a poem.
fraoch m. (fróch) heath.
glas f. (gklass) a lock.
gradh m. (grágh) love.
lámh f. (lláv) a hand.
laoch m. (llóch) a hero.
lón m. (lawn) a meadow.
maor m. (mör) an officer.
oglach m. (oklúch) a servant.
ospag† f. (ospak) a sob.
rámh m. (rrhóv) an oar.
run m. (roon) darling.
saor m. (sóir) a joiner.
sguab f. (skooóü) a sheaf.
slat f. (sláht) a rod.
sluagh m. (sloóü) people.
srad f. (srátt) a spark.
sron f. (sron) a nose.
tarbh m. (tarúv) a bull.
tuadh f. (tooóü) an axe.
tur m. (dtoor) a tower.

* The student who only knows the English language thinks the formation of the plurals in that language very simple, yet the varied inflections which characterise the plurals of many common nouns is surprising. Here is a selection only:—man men, foot feet, cow kine, child children, brother brethren, box boxes, ox oxen, arch arches, loch lochs, wife wives, shelf shelves, staff staves, ruff ruffs, fly flies, penny pence, money monies, echo echoes, piano pianos, mouse mice, deer deer, alms alms, news news. In comparison, Gaelic seems much more regular.
† These do not add an e in the genitive.
‡ Dorus also makes a plural in dorsan.
258. Exercises on the foregoing nouns:
Decline the following with the definite article—
cluas, al, dan, lon, laogh, bruach, maor, tuadh, slat, ospag.
Decline the following without the article—
cat, cuan, gradh, dos, sguab, clar, salm.

259. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:
1. Tha Albannach air a’ mhonadh.
2. Tha tuadh an t-saoir briste.
3. Tha dos air piob a’ mhaoir.
4. Tha craobhan anns an lon.
5. Bha an sluagh air seinn an orain.
6. Tha ’n eil a’ ghlas air an doruis.
7. Tha’ n eil a’ ghlas air an doruis.
8. Bha an t-acras air a’ bhalaich.
9. Tha an gille a’ seinn dain µ na bruachan.

260. Translate into Gaelic:
1. A tree is on the hill.
2. The Scotsman is a hero.
3. The oars of the boat are here.
4. A bull is on the plain.
5. A dirk is in the officer’s hand.
6. The ears of a cat.
7. A lock is on the door.
8. The lock of the door is broken.
9. The darling of the people is here.
10. I was at the tower on the hill.
11. The boy sang an old man’s song.
12. The door of the tower is open.
13. The joiner’s axe is sharp.
14. The servant’s ear was at the door.
15. The old man’s back is dirty.

LESSON XXIV.
THE NOUN. II.
PARTICULAR RULES FOR FORMING THE GENITIVE.

261. A number of nouns in a and o change these vowels into ui in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>carn</strong></td>
<td>m. a cairn, heap of stones.</td>
<td><strong>luirg</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>calg</strong></td>
<td>m. (kaluk), a prickle.</td>
<td><strong>lorg</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>car</strong></td>
<td>m. (kar) a turn.</td>
<td><strong>luirge</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>clag</strong></td>
<td>m. (klak) a bell.</td>
<td><strong>luiρgt</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>cnoc</strong></td>
<td>m. (krochk) a hill.</td>
<td><strong>cord</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>cord</strong></td>
<td>m. a string.</td>
<td><strong>crodh</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>boc</strong></td>
<td>m. (poch) a buck.</td>
<td><strong>broc</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>balg</strong></td>
<td>m. (balitk) a wallet.</td>
<td><strong>bald</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bord</strong></td>
<td>m. (bawrd), a table.</td>
<td><strong>bord</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>broc</strong></td>
<td>m. (bprochk), a badger.</td>
<td><strong>broc</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
fait, m. (fallt) hair.
fonn (jownn) a tune.
gob m. (gop), a bill, a beak
long, f. a ship.
oic, m. (awlk), evil.
ord, m. (awrdt), a hammer.
port, m. (porst), a harbour.
sloc, m. (slochk), a pit.
sop, m. a wisp.
spong, m. (sponk) a sponge.
toll, m. (towlt) a hole.
tom, m. (townm) a knoll.
tonn, f. (townn) a wave.
tromp, f. a trumpet.

262. A number of nouns in *ea* or *io* contract these into *i* in the genitive, and are declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

**ceann**, m. *(kyaun)* a head.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom. ceann</td>
<td>cinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen. cinn</td>
<td>cheann</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat. ceann</td>
<td>cinn</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns similarly declined:—

**biadh**, m. *(bpeeugh)* food.
**breac**, m. *(prechk)* a trout.
**cinneadh**, m. *(keennugh)* a clan.
**coileach**, m. *(koyltuch)* a cock.
**crioch**, f. *(kreeuch)* an end.
**fear**, m. *(fer)* a man.
**gleann**, m. *(glaunn)* a glen.
**leac**, f. *(ilechk)* a flagstone.
**lion**, m. *(lyeen)* a net.
**preas**, m. *(pras)* a bush.
**mac**, m. *(machk)* a son.
**siol**, m. *(sheell)* seed.

263. A number of nouns in *ea*, *eu*, and *ia* change these vowels into *ei* in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

**cliabhd**, m. a basket.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom. cliabh</td>
<td>cleibh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen. cleibh</td>
<td>cliabhd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat. cliabhd</td>
<td>cleibh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns similarly declined:—

**breug**, f. *(bprak)* a lie.
**caileag**, f. *(kalluh)* a girl.
**cairdeas**, m. *(karjess)* friendship.
**coibhneas**, m. *(koyvness)* kindness.
**cealg**, f. *(kyaluh)* deceit.
**ceard**, m. *(kyaruh)* a tinker.
**ceart**, m. *(kyarst)* a right.
**ceum**, m. *(kam)* a step.
**ciall**, m. *(keeluh)* sense.
**cleireach**, m. *(klaruch)* a clerk.
**coigreach**, m. *(koykruch)* a stranger.

**creach**, f. *(krech)* plunder.
**creag**, f. *(krak)* a rock.
**dealg**, m. *(tchaluk)* pin.
**each** *(ach)* horse.
**fearg**, f. *(feruk)* anger.
**fiadh**, m. *(fee-ugh)* a deer.
**geug**, f. *(gak)* a branch.
**ial**, f. *(eull)* a thong.
**iasg**, m. *(eeusk)* a fish.
**iteag**, f. *(eetuck)* a fish.
**neamh**, m. *(nyau)* heaven.
**sealg**, f. *(shaluk)* hunting.
**sliabh**, m. *(sleewv)* a moor.
264. A number of nouns in a change the a into oi in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{cas}, \ f. (\text{kas}) & \text{a foot.} \\
\text{Nom.} & \text{cas} \\
\text{Gen.} & \text{coise} \\
\text{Dat.} & \text{cois}
\end{array}
\]

Nouns similarly declined:

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{bas}, \ f. (\text{bass}) & \text{the palm.} \\
\text{clach}, \ f. (\text{klach}) & \text{a stone.} \\
\text{clann}, \ f. (\text{klaunn}) & \text{children.} \\
\text{crann}, \ f. (\text{kraunn}) & \text{a trunk, tree.}
\end{array}
\]

265. A number of nouns of one syllable, both masculine and feminine, add a to form the genitive, and add an or annan to form the plural, and are declined as follows:

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{loch}, \ m. (\text{lloch}) & \text{a loch.} \\
\text{Nom.} & \text{loch} \\
\text{Gen.} & \text{locha} \\
\text{Dat.} & \text{loch}
\end{array}
\]

Nouns similarly declined:

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{ath}, \ f. (\text{âh}) & \text{a kiln.} \\
\text{anam}, \ m. (\text{anùm}) & \text{a soul.} \\
\text{beus}, \ f. (\text{bàs}) & \text{virtue.} \\
\text{cladh}, \ m. (\text{kàgh}) & \text{a churchyard.} \\
\text{earb}, \ f. (\text{àrùp}) & \text{a roe.} \\
\text{feum}, \ m. (\text{fàm}) & \text{need.} \\
\text{modh}, \ f. (\text{mògh}) & \text{a manner.} \\
\text{guth}, \ m. (\text{goù}) & \text{a voice.} \\
\text{cleoc}, \ m. (\text{klyochk}) & \text{a mantel.} \\
\text{cnaímh}, \ m. (\text{kráyv}) & \text{a bone.}
\end{array}
\]

266. A number of nouns in eu change these vowels into eoi in the genitive, and are declined as follows:

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{beul}, \ m. (\text{hpàll}) & \text{a month.} \\
\text{Nom.} & \text{beul} \\
\text{Gen.} & \text{beoil} \\
\text{Dat.} & \text{beul}
\end{array}
\]

Nouns similarly declined:

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{deur}, \ m. (\text{tchàr}) & \text{a tear,} \\
\text{gleus}, \ m. (\text{glàs}) & \text{order.} \\
\text{leus}, \ m. (\text{llòys}) & \text{light.} \\
\text{eun}, \ m. (\text{àn}) & \text{a bird.}
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{neul}, \ m. (\text{nyàll}) & \text{a cloud.} \\
\text{sgeul}, \ m. (\text{shàll}) & \text{a story.} \\
\text{feur}, \ m. (\text{fàr}) & \text{grass.} \\
\text{meur}, \ m. (\text{màr}) & \text{a finger,}
\end{array}
\]
267. A number of nouns ending in -chd and -dh are indeclinable in the singular, that is all cases are alike, and form their plural in an.

**beachd**, m. (*bechk*) an observation, an opinion.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>beachd</strong></td>
<td><strong>beachdan</strong></td>
<td><strong>bheachd</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns similarly declined:—

- **faidh**, m. (*fäe*) a prophet.
- **cleachd**, m. (*klechk*) a habit.
- **uchd**, m. (*oochh*) a breast.
- **beannachd**, m. a blessing.
- **reachd**, m. (*rächh*) a law, statute.
- **fuachd**, m. (*foochh*) a cold.
- **foachd**, m. (*fächh*) a host.
- **rioghachd** f. (*ree-achh*) a kingdom.

268. A number of nouns whose final vowel is narrow (generally called the second declension), have both masculine and feminine nouns forming their genitive by adding an ə; and an **(ean)** to form their plural.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nom. <strong>mir</strong> m. (<em>meer</em>) a piece.</td>
<td><strong>sraid</strong> f. (<em>srädt</em>) a street.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>gen. <strong>mir</strong></td>
<td><strong>mirean</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dat. <strong>mir</strong></td>
<td><strong>mirean</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Nouns similarly declined:—

- **tir** f. (*cheer*) land.
- **aite**, m. (*āh-tchū*) a place.
- **ceist**, f. (*keest*) a question.
- **im**, m. (*ymi*) butter.
- **bid** m. (*bpidt*) a chirp.
- **mionaid**, f. (*my natch*) a minute.
- **tigh**, **taigh** m. (*tlăh y*) a house.
- **uair** f. (*oouir*) an hour.
- **cir**, f. (*keer*) a comb.
- **ainm**, f. (*anām*) a name.

269. Nouns of one syllable ending in a vowel are indeclinable in the singular, and to prevent a hiatus, insert a silent th before the plural terminations an or ean.

**Singular** N. G. and D. **cno** f. (*kro*) a nut.
**Plural**, Nom. **cnothan** nuts; Gen. **chno** of nuts.

Nouns similarly declined:—

- **seo**, m. (*kvo*) mist.
- **clo**, m. (*kllō*) cloth; **cloithean**
- **gleo**, f. (*glyo*) a fight.
- **la**, m. (*lla*) a day.
- **cliu**, m. (*klyoo*) praise.
- **cloithean**
- **gleo**, f. (*glyo*) a fight.
- **ni**, m. (*ny*) a thing.

270. Decline as definite nouns, giving gender and translation, the following:—

calg, tromp, balg, tom, ceann, lion, mac, gleann, mir, bord.

271. Decline the following similarly, but as indefinite nouns:—

calg, clann, ord, crodh, long, cnoc, caileag, im, cir, sraid.
272. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Bha am fear anns an t-sraid.  2. Bha coig brie ann an lion an fhir ud.
3. Tha an t-ord air a’ bhord.  4. Bha am broc anns an toll air a’ chnoc.
5. Tha long mhor anns a’ phort.  6. Tha an coigreach a’ sealg fhiadh air an t-sliabh.
10. Tha eolas agam air dall.  11. Cha ’n eil fion anns an tigh.
16. Tha an gille aig ceann na sraide.

273. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. A big ship is in the harbour.  2. The badger is in a hole on the moor.
3. The hammer is on the table.  4. The man has five trout in the net.
5. The end of the string is at the flagstone.  6. A basket of seed is on the table.
7. Is there fish in the basket?  8. The stranger was hunting deer on the hill.
9. The foot of the horse is sore. 10. There are tracks of the feet of horses on the moor.
11. The girl with the voice. 12. I had no knowledge of the law.
13. That stranger’s house is in this street. 14. There is bread and butter in the house.
15. The land question is the question of questions. 16. A prophet gave a blessing on the host.
17. The man is at the top of the street. 18. Five trout are in the man’s net.

LESSON XXV.
The Noun. III.

Particular Rules (continued)—Polysyllables.

274. In declining nouns of more than one syllable the method of forming the genitive and plural depends on the form of the last syllable.

Feminine nouns may not always add the terminal e in the genitive singular.

275. Nouns ending in air may be of three kinds.

276 (a) A class indicating an agent or doer except (b). These nouns are indeclinable in the singular and add ean to form the plural.

sealgair (shalūgār) nm. a hunter.
piobar (peepr̥) nm. a piper.
ciobair (keepr̥) nm. a shepherd.
morair (mōr̥r̥) nm. a nobleman.
murtair (moortūr̥) nm. a murderer.
lanntair (llanntūr̥) nm. a lantern.
tosgair (ttoskūr̥) nm. a herald.
iasgair (y askūr̥) nm. a fisherman.
277. (b) A class indicating kinship. These drop the i to form the genitive and contract and generally add ichean to form the plural.

Nom. and Dat.  Gen.  * Plural, N.G.D.

athair (á-úr) a father.  athar  athraithean
mathair (ma-úr) a mother.  mathar  mathraithean
brathair (brakur) a brother.  brathar  braithrean
seanair (shánúr) a grandfather.  seanar  seanairean
seanamhair, a grandmother.  seanamhar  seanamhairean
piuthair (pyoo-úr) a sister.  peathar  peathraithean

278 (c) A class indicating neither of these, but where air forms part of the word. These and nouns ending in ar, al, and ail, contract in the genitive and add ach, and form their plural by contracting and adding ichean. The following are all feminine:—

Nom. and Dat.  Gen.  Pl. N.G.†D.

acair (achkúr) an anchor.  acrach  acraichean
anail (anúl) breath.  analach  acairean
barail (baral) opinion.  baralach  anailean
cathair (ka-úr) a chair.  cathrach  barailéan
coir (kor) a right.  corach  cathraithean

dail (dahil) delay, a meeting.  dalach  coraichean
faidhir (fá-yr) a fair.  faidhreach  coiréan
iuchair (voochur) a key.  iuchrach  dalaichean
litir (leetchúr) a letter.  m  litreach  faidíchean
luachair (luoochúr) rushes.  luachrach  faidhean
machair (mochur) a field, plain.  machrach  faidhrach
nathair (náhúr) a serpent.  nathrach  machraithean
peasair (poo-úr) pease.  peasrach  nathraithean
ponair (ponúr) beans.  ponarach  togalaithean
togail (tokúl) a building.  togalach  togailean

279. Some Nouns contract and add an a or an e to form the genitive and form the plural by adding an, achan, or ichean:—


abhaínn, f. (ávun) a river.  aibhne  aibhnichean
buaidh, f. (boo-ú) a victory.  buadha  buadhán
buidhean f. (booyún) a company.  buidhne  buidhnean

* The genitive plural when indefinite aspirates the nominative plural or genitive singular, but a definite noun does not aspire:—
bhrathar, "of brothers";  nam brathar, "of the brothers."
† The genitive plural if indefinite is aspirated according to rule.
---|---|---
banais, f. (bhan ysh) a wedding. | bainnse | bainnsean
colmìnn f. (koll ynn) the body. | cola | colunnnean
duthaich f. (dòo-ych) a country. | duthcha | duthchannan
fìcail f. (fiach-kyl) a tooth. | fìcla | fìcìlan

280. Nouns of more than one syllable ending in a vowel are indeclinable in the singular, and add achan or ichean to form the plural:—

Sing. N.G.D. | Plur. N.G.D.*
---|---
balla m. (pallü) a wall. | ballachan
bàta m. (bpatü) a boat. | bàtaichean
cota m. (koh tìi) a coat. | cotaichean
cridhe m. (kree-ü) a heart. | cridheachan
canna m. (kannü) a jug. | cannachan
fairge f. (faräkü) the sea. | fairgeachan
gloine f. (kloynü) a glass. | gloinneachan
linne f. (lynnü) a pool. | linneachan
leaba f. (lyäpü) a bed. | leapaichean
uisge m. (ooshku) water. | uisgeachan

281. Nouns ending in l, n, le, or ne drop the vowel and add tean to form the plural:—

Sing. N.G.D. | Plur. N.G.D.*
---|---
baile m. a town. | bailtean
coilé f. (kolyü) a wood. | coilletean
feilf f. (fàyill) a festival. | feiltean
mile f. (my-lü) a thousand. | miltean
smuain f. (smoo-ün) a thought. | smuainteann
teine f. (ichä-nü) fire. | teinteann
tuill f. (too yl) a flood. | tuilttean

282. The following Nouns are altogether irregular:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bean f. a woman</td>
<td>mna</td>
<td>mnaoi</td>
<td>bhan</td>
<td>bhanann</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bo f. a cow</td>
<td>boin</td>
<td>boin</td>
<td>bhe</td>
<td>bho</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>braich f. malt</td>
<td>brach</td>
<td>braich</td>
<td>coin</td>
<td>coin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cu m. a dog</td>
<td>coin</td>
<td>cu</td>
<td>coir</td>
<td>coir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cuid f. a share</td>
<td>codach</td>
<td>cuid</td>
<td>caorach</td>
<td>caorach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>coir f. a right</td>
<td>corach</td>
<td>cor</td>
<td>caora</td>
<td>caoraich</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>caora f. a sheep</td>
<td>caorach</td>
<td>caora</td>
<td>droma</td>
<td>dromaich</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>druim m. a back</td>
<td>droma</td>
<td>druim</td>
<td>droma</td>
<td>droma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dia m. a god</td>
<td>de</td>
<td>dia</td>
<td>de</td>
<td>deoch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>deoch f. a drink</td>
<td>dibhe</td>
<td>deoch</td>
<td>full</td>
<td>chaorach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>full f. (foo yl) blood</td>
<td>full</td>
<td>full</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gobha m. a smith</td>
<td>gobhainn</td>
<td>gobha</td>
<td>goibhnean</td>
<td>gobhnean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gobhar m. a goat</td>
<td>goibhre</td>
<td>gobhar</td>
<td>goibhrean</td>
<td>gobhrean or gobhair</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gnìomh m. a deed</td>
<td>gniomha</td>
<td>gniomh</td>
<td>gniomh</td>
<td>gniomh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>muir f. (moo yr) the sea</td>
<td>mara</td>
<td>mara</td>
<td>maran</td>
<td>marann</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sail (sal) f. a heel</td>
<td>salach</td>
<td>sail</td>
<td>salach</td>
<td>salach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>talamh m. the earth</td>
<td>taimhuinn</td>
<td>talamh</td>
<td>taimh</td>
<td>taimh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>suil f. (sooil) an eye</td>
<td>suil</td>
<td>suil</td>
<td>suil</td>
<td>suilean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mil f. (myil) honey</td>
<td>meala</td>
<td>mil</td>
<td>meala</td>
<td>meala</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leaba f. (liyäpü) a bed</td>
<td>leapa</td>
<td>leabaideh</td>
<td>leapaichean</td>
<td>leapaichean</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* An indefinite genitive plural will be aspirated according to rule.
283. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

284. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. A shepherd was on the moor this morning.  2. I was at the house of the pierer last night.  3. The boat of the fisherman is in the harbour.  4. I will see the brother of the nobleman at the river.  5. The key of the door is here.  6. There is a chair on the right of the door.  7. The little girl has a jug of water.  8. That man had a glass of wine.  9. I had a bed of feathers last night.  10. There was a fire in the town this evening.  11. There was a wedding festival here yesterday.  12. There are woods in that country.  13. He has broken a glass.  14. There were fish in the nets this morning.  15. I found a boy's shoe this evening.  16. The joiner's hammer is broken.  17. The girls sang a song.  18. We found the boy's books on the banks of the river.  19. The books of that boy were wet.  20. Your grandfather's house is at the top of the road.  21. There are men at work at the end of the house.

285. Examination on the Noun:—
LESSON XXVI.

THE GOVERNMENT OF NOUNS.

286. Nouns are influenced by other nouns and adjectives; by verbs; by prepositions; causing in the noun a change of case. These cases are called Nominative, Genitive, Accusative, and Dative.

287. The term genitive covers the English possessive case, but as our Gaelic genitive noun does more than the term possessive implies, it is better termed genitive.

THE INDEFINITE POSSESSIVE CASE.

288. In English we can say (a) "a boy's book" or (b) "the book of a boy." The first (a) is the inflected form and (b) the uninflected form. Notice that the "the" disappears when written in the inflected form. Gaelic idiom may be said to be a combination of both forms. In Gaelic the "the" is not translated, and "of a boy" is translated by the genitive case of "boy"; "of" coming between two nouns in this manner is not translated (par. 212). In Gaelic the qualifying word comes after the noun it qualifies, thus we have, leabhar balaich "the book of a boy."

THE DEFINITE POSSESSIVE CASE.

289. Let us take the same phrase with the definite article attached to both nouns, "the book of the boy." The beginner invariably translates this wrongly an leabhar a' bhalaich. Write the English in the inflected form thus: "the boy's book." Notice that one "the" has disappeared; note also that the "the" left belongs to "boy's" and not to "book." Now bearing this in mind we translate thus: leabhar a' bhalaich.

290. The rule here is, "A definite noun only can be qualified by another definite noun which is in the genitive; the definite noun so qualified never takes the article" (pars. 212, 303). A possessive pronoun excludes the article from both nouns, as similarly happens in the English inflected form.

Leabhar a' bhalaich, the boy's book, the book of the boy.
Leabhar a bhalaich, his boy's book, the book of his boy.
Leabhar a balaich, her boy's book, the book of her boy.
291. To sum up. This specially defining use and non-use of the article in Gaelic is similar to the inflected English possessive in idiom, except that the position of the nouns in the one language is the reverse of their position in the other.

292. When two or more nouns are in a possessive phrase one noun only is translated in the genitive. The Gaelic usage is again like the English inflected possessive in its treatment of the article. Note again the complete reversal in the idiom of the two languages.*

Uninflected (a) The beauty of the daughter of the king.

Inflected (b) The king’s daughter’s beauty.†

(c) Boidhchhead nighean an righ (not nighinn).

In (b) it is the term “king” which has the article and in (c) its Gaelic equivalent righ also has the article.

293. A noun following a verbal noun is put in the genitive.
Ag itheadh arain, eating bread (lit.) at eating of bread.

294. Only an indefinite noun of a partitive nature can be followed by or govern another noun in the genitive. These generally denote quantity, plenty or scarcity. Some of these terms are: moran many, much; lan full; sac bag; beagan a little; similarly with an ounce, a lb., a stone, etc., any term indicative of a part or portion of anything (par. 302).

Moran sluaigh, many (of) people. Badan fraoich, a sprig of heather
Lan oir, full of gold. Sac mine, a sack of meal.
Pios arain, a piece of bread. Beagan uisge, a little water.

295. But when we have an indefinite noun governing, qualifying, or descriptive of another indefinite noun we make practically a compound noun. The qualified noun we place first and it is declined regularly through all the

* A common feature is that the possessive and qualifying nouns (pars. 212, 295) which we translate by the genitive have really the limiting force of an adjective in both languages.

† We can also say in English “the beauty of the king’s daughter.” In Gaelic we have only one way we can properly translate all these English forms.
The qualifying noun comes second, but is not declined, keeping the genitive form throughout all cases; aspirating like an adjective in the singular in agreement with the gender of the first element (par. 327); aspirating all cases in the plural. A final e in the genitive of a first element is deleted. Compound nouns take the gender of their principal component except those compounded with ban which are always feminine. A final lingual prevents aspiration of an initial dental (par. 38).

296. A noun and adjective forming a compound are declined as if each stood apart (see government of adjectives (pars 327-8).

Coileach-dubh, a black-cock. Coilich-duibh, of a black-cock.

297. When the adjective precedes the noun with which it is compounded, the adjective retains the nominative form, while the noun is regularly declined through all cases.

Dubh-fhacal, a dark saying. Dubh-fhacail, of a dark saying.

298. When a compound noun is definite the article is placed before its first word whether noun or adjective, and both the article and the first word are subject to all the modifications already illustrated in Lesson xxii. according to the initial letter of the first word.

An t-oig-fhear, the young man.
An og bhean, the young woman.
An seann duine, the old man.
An t-seann-bhean, the old woman.
A’ choisir chiuil, the musical choir.
A’ chearc-fhraoich, the moor-hen.

299. The application of the definite article to a compound noun and the change arising in meaning from its use and non-use before the first as well as before the second noun can best be shown by example.
Observe the effect of the definite article when placed before **cogaidh** changing its meaning to some special and definite "war" and not "war" in general.

Take another example: **meadhon oidhche** "midnight"; **am meadhon oidhche** "the midnight"; now insert an before **oidhche** and its meaning is at once defined, **meadhon na h-oidhche** "the middle of the night"; *i.e.* some special night named or known.

300. A study of these compound forms of the noun will show that here again is a similarity with continental languages. It will be observed there is an essential difference of construction from English. Gaelic is like French and other languages in that it goes from the general to the particular, while the English go from the particular to the general. The arrangement of the compound noun in English is exactly inverted in Gaelic.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Eng.</th>
<th>Cod Liver Oil.</th>
<th>Annual General Meeting</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3 2 1</td>
<td>3 2 1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>Huile de foie de morue.</th>
<th>Assemblée générale annuelle.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 2 3</td>
<td>1 2 3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic,</th>
<th>Uilleadh gruthan throsg.</th>
<th>Coinneamh choitcheann bhliadhnaí</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 2 3</td>
<td>1 2 3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Government of the Noun by Prepositions.**

301. Prepositions govern the dative case, in fact, simple prepositions govern no other case (par. 595). Compound prepositions govern the genitive case (par. 614).

**A Definite Noun qualifying an Indefinite Noun.**

302. A definite noun qualifying an indefinite noun cannot be placed in the genitive case, though in English it is governed by "of." We cannot have a definite genitive noun qualifying an indefinite noun (par. 294). In Gaelic we place it in the dative case following the preposition de. If an indefinite noun which would otherwise be placed in the genitive (par. 294) is qualified by an adjective, it must be placed in the dative instead (pars. 342, 604b).
Sac de'n mhin sin,  
Air pios de'n aran,  
(Air) pios de aran math,  
(Air) pios de dh' aran math,  
Gann de storas (par. 604b)  
a bag of that meal.  
on a piece of the bread.  
(on) a piece of good bread.  
(on) a piece of good bread.  
scarce of wealth.

303. When there is a demonstrative adjective attached to the first noun the article must be used with it as well as with the second noun, an exception to pars. 212, 602.

Air a’ phios so de aran,  
Am pios so de aran math,  
Am pios so de’n aran sin,  
Am pios math so de’n aran sin,  
on this piece of bread.  
this piece of good bread.  
this piece of that bread.  
this good piece of that bread.

304. When one noun is predicated of another by the verb is and an adjective of praise or dispraise is connected with the predicate, the noun is never put in the genitive. In English the noun is governed by the preposition “of,” but in Gaelic it is actually in the nominative case after the verb is, which is here used as a relative, standing for “who is.”

Is e fear is mor rath,  
Is e am fear is mo ciall,  
he is a man of great prosperity.  
he is the man of greatest sense.

PROPER NAMES AND NOUNS IN APPPOSITION.

305. When we have two or more nouns together denoting the same person, such as a proper name, they become a compound noun. The surname or second element is treated as a qualifying adjective (pars. 295, 327).

Bha righ Tearlach an sin,  
Tha Seumas Camshron aig an dorus,  
Tha Mairi Chamshron air dol dhachaidh,  
King Charles was there.  
James Cameron is at the door.  
Mary Cameron has gone home.

306. If these are limiting or qualifying another noun, both name and surname are in the genitive.

Ceann Thearlach Chaimbeil,  
Tigh Sheumais Chamshroin,  
cf. Ceann Righ Tearlach (not Thearlach),  
Charles Campbell’s head.  
James Cameron’s house.  
King Charles’ head.

307. In the vocative: A Mhairi, mo ghaol, Mary, my love.

308. Mac “son” is prefixed for a masculine surname and Nic for a feminine. It means “one of the Clan.” Nic for ni mhic (nighean mhic) is a distinction not made in English, in which it has no equivalent, it is always “Mac”
even for females. In usage Mac and Nic are followed by the genitive which is always aspirated (par. 295).

Mac Dhomhnull Mac Dhughaill, Donald Mac Dougall.
Iain Mac Thomais, John Thomson.
Anna Nic Uilleim, Ann Williamson.
Mairi Nic Dhomhnuill, Mary Mac Donald.

309. A simple appellative may be used and be in apposition, descriptive of a person’s position, trade, or calling. These generally omit the article, though a feminine is aspirated as though an article were present.

Calum Ciobair, Malcolm the shepherd.
Cu Chaluim Chiobair, Malcolm the shepherd’s dog.
Bha Calum ur n-athair an so, Malcolm your father was here.
Ceit Bhanarach, Kate the milkmaid.

310. Calum an Ciobair is not wrong, although it is not as native as the form given, but if the second part is a compound, the article is necessary—

Alasdair an Ceardumha, Alastair the coppersmith.
Calum a’ Chiobair is quite a different matter. It means “Malcolm of the shepherd—his son or his servant.”

311. A term descriptive of the trade, etc., coming after a person’s full proper name requires the article.

Domhnull Camshron am maighstir-sgoil, Donald Cameron, the schoolmaster.
Seumas Grannd an taillear, James Grant, the tailor.

312. A noun in apposition to, and explanatory of another noun in the genitive case, is not itself in the genitive case, but in the nominative case.

Leabhar Dhonnachaidh Bhan am Bard, The book of Duncan Ban the poet.
Mac Ioseiph an saor, The son of Joseph the carpenter.

Notice that we have am bard and an saor, and not a’ bhaird or an t-saoir (the genitive case of them) though they are explanatory of nouns which are in the genitive.

313. Compare the effect of the genitive if applied to this example: Mac Ioseiph an t-saoir. In this form the sense is completely changed; the meaning being now “the son of the carpenter’s Joseph” (i.e. “the grandson of the carpenter,” or this Joseph may be an employee of the carpenter).
314. A noun in apposition to a noun in the dative case is put in the nominative.

Thubhairt e ri Sarai a bhean  
he said to Sarah his wife.  
(not a mhnaoi).

---

LESSON XXVII.

THE ADJECTIVE.

315. The natural position of the Gaelic adjective is immediately after the noun which it qualifies, as:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Adjective</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>long mhor</td>
<td>(lonk vor) a big ship.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cu donn</td>
<td>(koo dtownn) a brown dog.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>craobh ard</td>
<td>(kröv arát) a high tree.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The exceptions to this rule are the following:

316. When the adjective is specially emphatic and is ascribed to its noun by the verb is or its negative cha, etc., it is placed before the noun and immediately follows the verb.

Is fuar an la e,  
it is a cold day.  
Is math a' bhean i,  
she is a good woman.

317. Numeral adjectives both cardinal and ordinal are always placed before their nouns.  
Tri bliadhna, three years.  
An treas bliadhna, the third year.

318. Some adjectives of one syllable are placed immediately before the noun which they qualify and generally form a compound word. They suffer no change in termination, but the initial letter may be aspirated if aspirable. See government of compound nouns (pars. 295-8).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Adjective</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Seann duine</td>
<td>an old man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Og bhean</td>
<td>a young wife.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deagh obair</td>
<td>a good work.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Droch dhuine</td>
<td>a bad man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gorm shuil</td>
<td>a blue eye.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sar obair</td>
<td>choice work.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

319. The agreement of an adjective and noun is regulated by its position in the sentence.

When the adjective immediately follows the noun, it agrees with it in gender, number, and case. Suffering a change sometimes in the aspiration of its initial letter, sometimes a vowel change, according to the gender and case of the noun to which it is a qualification, and thus they
have two forms of declension:—the one with masculine nouns and the other with feminine nouns.

Fear mor, a big man. Bean mhor, a big woman.

320. When the adjective is one which qualifies and precedes its noun, the form of the adjective does not change in any respect dependent on its noun, but it is influenced by prefixed particles as if it were part of the substantive itself, and it aspirates the initial of its noun if aspirable, as if it formed a compound term (par. 298, 318).

321. When the adjective is in the predicate of the proposition and ascribes a quality to the noun which is the subject, the form of the adjective is not modified by its noun but is used in its simple form whatever be the gender or number of the noun.

```
Tha a' chlach (f) bheag ban, the small stone is white.
Tha a' chlach bhan beag, the white stone is small.
Tha a' chlach beag ban, the stone is small and white.
Tha a' chlach bheag bhan... the small white stone is...
Is ban a' chlach bheag, white is the small stone.
Tha na clachan beaga ban, the small stones are white.
Tha na clachan bana beag, the white stones are small.
Tha na clachan beag ban, the stones are small and white.
Tha na clachan beaga bana... the small white stones are...
```

Upon examining these sentences it will be seen that in the first the adjective "small" comes before the verb "is" and "white" comes after "is"; in the second they are reversed and in the third both adjectives come after "is." It is very important to note that in translating into Gaelic sentences like the above, that adjectives which in English follow the verb are not aspirated or modified in any way. In the fourth sentence we have both adjectives aspirated, which means that the sentence is incomplete, the qualification being left out.

322. The adjective is not modified when it qualifies the action of the verb, as:—dean an sgian geur, "make the knife sharp," Here the adjective does not agree with the noun, for it modifies not the noun but the verb, and the expression is equivalent to "sharpen the knife." But to express "take the sharp knife" we say, gabh an^sgian
gheur wherein the adjective agrees with the noun, distinguishing that knife from others and consequently it is written in the feminine gender to agree with sgian.

323. A noun or adjective whose initial is d, t, s; l, n, r, when preceded by a noun or adjective terminating in l or n resists aspiration (par. 38).

324. When an adjective is used to describe the quality of two or more nouns it agrees with the one immediately next to it, as:—fear agus bean mhath, "a good man and woman." Here the adjective mhath agrees with bean the latter noun, but if the position of the nouns is reversed, bean agus fear math, "a good woman and man," the adjective math agrees with fear.

Declension of the Adjective.

325. The adjective forms its cases in the singular number from the nominative singular according to the rules as given for the declension of nouns having the same vowel or diphthong or termination in the nominative.

326. Thus the general rule is to form the genitive by introducing an i after the last broad vowel, the feminine adding the terminal e, and the dative singular feminine the same as the genitive, but omitting the terminal e. Adjectives of two or more syllables generally make the genitive sing. feminine without the terminal e.

327. The nominative singular masculine and feminine are alike, but the feminine is aspirated; the genitive singular masculine is always aspirated; the genitive singular feminine is always plain and generally ends in e; the nominative and dative singular feminine are aspirated both with and without the definite article; the dative singular masculine is not aspirated when without the article but it suffers aspiration when the definite article is attached; the vocative singular and plural both masculine and feminine are aspirated.

* This is the only difference which combination with the article causes.
In the plural if the adjective is a monosyllable in a broad vowel an a is added, and if in a narrow vowel an e is added:

- **Craobhan arda**, high trees.
- **Orain bhinne**, sweet songs.
- **Gillean mora**, big boys.
- **Sruthan casa**, swift streams.
- **Daoine glice**, wise men.

Adjectives of more than one syllable have the plural the same as the nominative singular:

- **Caileagan maiseach**, handsome girls.
- **Aithrichean dileas**, faithful fathers.

Adjectives do not change for case or gender in the plural:

- Some adjectives in o change the o into u in the gen. sing.
- Some adjectives in ea, eu, and ia change into i.
- Some adjectives in a change into oi.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mor</td>
<td>Mhor</td>
<td>Oic</td>
<td>Oic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mhoir</td>
<td>Moire</td>
<td>Ulc</td>
<td>Ulc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mor</td>
<td>Mhoir</td>
<td>Oic</td>
<td>Ulc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mhoir</td>
<td>Mhoir</td>
<td>Ulc</td>
<td>Oic</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Common Plurals—**Mora** and **Olc(a)**.

Examples of the Genitive Form of the Adjective:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ard (árdit) high.</td>
<td>Aird</td>
<td>Airdhe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ban (b páin) fair.</td>
<td>Bhain</td>
<td>Baine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beag (b pák) little.</td>
<td>Bhig</td>
<td>Bige</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beairteach (b párshtyúch) rich.</td>
<td>Bheairtich</td>
<td>Beairtiche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breac (prách) speckled.</td>
<td>Bhric</td>
<td>Brice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caol (koll) narrow.</td>
<td>Chaoil</td>
<td>Caoile</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ceart (ky àrst) right.</td>
<td>Cheirt</td>
<td>Ceirte</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cian (keeín) foreign.</td>
<td>Chein</td>
<td>Ceine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crom (krown) crooked.</td>
<td>Chruim</td>
<td>Cruime</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crubach (kroo péch) lame.</td>
<td>Chruaich</td>
<td>Cruaiche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dail (tawil) blind.</td>
<td>Dhoil</td>
<td>Dóille</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dearg (ichárák) red.</td>
<td>Dheirg</td>
<td>Delrge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Direach (tchár éch) straight.</td>
<td>Dhirch</td>
<td>Diriche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Donn (dtownn) brown.</td>
<td>Dhuinn</td>
<td>Dulinne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gann (káoonn) scarce.</td>
<td>Ghoin</td>
<td>Goine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geal (k yall) white.</td>
<td>Ghíl</td>
<td>Gíl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geur (kyar) sharp.</td>
<td>Gheir</td>
<td>Gelo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glan (ghkían) clean.</td>
<td>Ghloinn</td>
<td>Gloonne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glas (ghlas) grey.</td>
<td>Ghlais</td>
<td>Glaise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gorm (gorúm) blue.</td>
<td>Ghuirm</td>
<td>Guirme</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lom (llówm) bare.</td>
<td>Luím</td>
<td>Luíme</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Nom. Masc.

maiseach (má-shúch) pretty.
mall (má ool) slow.
moch, early.
mor big, great, tall.
olc (awák) evil, bad, wicked.
searbh (shá-rúv) bitter.
slan (slláwn) well.
taitneach (táitch-nyúch) pleasant.
tearc (dtchá-rákh) rare.
teinteach (tcháin-tchúch) fiery.
trom (trowm) heavy.

Gen. M. Gen. F.
mhaisich maisiche
mhoill moille
mhuich muiche
mhoir moire
uiísce uile
sheirbh seirbh
shlain slaine
thaitnich taitniche
theirc teirc
theintich teintiche
thruim truime

333. Adjectives ending in a vowel, ail, eil, idh, or chd, are indeclinable.

Noun and Adjective without the Article.

334. The initial form of the adjective depends on the gender and termination of the noun with which it is joined, and on the presence of the article.

Masculine Noun.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mor</td>
<td>gille mor</td>
<td>gillean mora</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Feminine Noun.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mhor</td>
<td>craobh mhor</td>
<td>craobhán mora</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Dat.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cat</td>
<td>gille mor</td>
<td>gillean mora</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

335. It will be noticed from the above examples that the adjective is aspirated in the nominative and dative feminine, and in the genitive masculine singular.

336. Observe cait ghlasa and note that where the adjective qualifies a noun whose nominative plural is formed like the genitive singular the adjective is aspirated in the nominative and dative plural. It will be found that this class includes principally masculine nouns (pars. 243, 252).

337. Vocabulary.

borb (bporúb) adj. fierce.
boideach (bpoíúch) adj. pretty.
Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

Translate into Gaelic:—
1. The rich man was lame. 2. He had a little dog. 3. It was a little black dog. 4. Was it a black terrier? No. 5. Is a terrier a dog? 6. A terrier is a small dog. 7. Was it not a white dog? 8. There was a brown dog at the door. 9. A bad little girl struck a little brown dog yesterday. 10. She was a pretty girl. 11. A bad boy was kicking a big horse. 12. A big horse was being kicked by a bad little boy. 13. It is a bare house. 14. Was it a bare house with a narrow door? 15. He was a rich man. 16. A black hen's head. 17. A brown horse's foot. 18. A fierce cow in a big field. 19. A sheep with black feet and a black head is there now.

LESsion XXVIII.

Noun and Adjective with the Article.

Examples.

an t-each donn m. the brown horse.

Sing. Plur.
Nom. an t-each donn na h-eich dhonna
Gen. an eich dhuiinn nan each donna
Dat. an each dhonn na h-eich dhonna, or na h-eachaibh donnna

a' chreag bheag f. the little rock.

Nom. a' chreag bheag na creagan beaga
Gen. na creige bige nan creaga beaga
Dat. a' chreig bhig na creagan beaga

341. From the above examples notice that an adjective qualifying a definite masculine noun in the dative case singular is aspirated in addition to the aspiration of the genitive shown in the previous example.

342. Adjectives of quantity and of a partitive nature govern an indefinite noun in the genitive, but if the noun
is definite the preposition **de** and the dative case must be used (pars. 294, 302, 604b).

Beagan arain,  
Beagan de'n aran,  
Moran sluigh,  
Iomadh de na bliadhnachan,  
Beagan greine,  
Beagan de'n ghrein,  

*a little bread.*  
*a little of the bread.*  
*many people.*  
*many of the years.*  
*little sunshine.*  
*little of the sunlight.*

343. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. *Is fuar an la e.*  
2. *An iad na h-eich mhora?*  
3. *Is iad.*  
4. *Tha clachan troma anns an achadh so.*  
5. *Tha an t-airgiid gann a nis.*  
6. *Tha an t-each dubh trom.*  
7. *Tha an cat breac leisg.*  
8. *Tha na coin gheala mor.*  
9. *Am bheil cearc air a' cheirg bhig?*  
10. *Bha an duine og air bristeadh na h-uinneige moire.*  
11. *Tha a' bho bheag bhan a' tighinn dhachaidh.*  
12. *Tha a' chearc ghorm dall.*  
13. *An robh an duine og air bristeadh an doruis chaoil?*  
14. *Is dubh an doruis beag.*  
15. *Tha neul glas air bharr na linne guirme.*  
16. *Iboidheach an dath a tha air an t-sobhraich.*

344. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. *Have the bad boys been home yet?*  
2. *The pretty little girl was in that big field this afternoon.*  
3. *The right knife is sharp.*  
4. *That man had the crooked stick.*  
5. *Where was he with the crooked stick?*  
6. *He was (bu) a big man.*  
7. *The house with the little narrow door is yonder.*  
8. *That will not be the house with the big door.*  
9. *The blind horse was being struck by the bad boys.*  
10. *The young boy was at the big black house last night.*  
11. *The bare trees are on the hill.*  
12. *The trees are bare now.*  
13. *Where is the little brown dog?*  
14. *The big black dog is with the man with the crooked stick.*

345. Correct and translate:—

am bean mor; an tigh bheag; laimh geal; mac an duine big; ceann an lhoch; beagan an h-aran; lamhan an duine droch; lamhan an ghille salacha; mac an tailleir bhiga; an duine mhath; bean glic; na clachan beage; seann dhan.

346. Examination Questions:—

1. *What is the general place of the Gaelic adjective qualifying a noun?*  
2. *Are adjectives indeclinable in Gaelic as in English?*  
3. *How is the plural of an adjective generally formed?*  
4. *What is the difference of the nominative and genitive masculine?*  
5. *In what lies the difference between the nominative and genitive feminine?*  
6. *What happens when adjectives precede their nouns?*  
7. *Do all adjectives which precede their nouns aspirate the noun?*  
8. *Why not? (give reasons).*  
9. *What does the aspiration of an adjective indicate?*  
10. *When does the noun aspirate the adjective?*
LESSON XXIX.

The Verbs tha and is with an Adjective.

347. There is always a difference in meaning between tha and is which we shall try to further illustrate by examples. One reason is that tha means "is now" and is means "is always" or "is" without any reference to time and circumstances. Tha mi bacach means "I am now lame," i.e., at present. Is bacach mi—if we use bacach with the force of a noun—means "I am lame—I am a cripple"; if bacach is used as a simple adjective then this form is bacach mi simply emphasises or draws special attention to the state or condition of "lameness," like saying "how lame I am!—it is lame I am—it is no slight lameness I have."

348. Compare the expressions (1) tha mi bronach and (2) is bronach mi. The first expression may be translated "I am sad," no particular emphasis being attached to any part of the sentence. The second expression is best translated "sad am I," in this case particular stress is laid on the fact of "sadness." The first phrase states with logical precision that the attribute "sad" belongs to the speaker, the second is a rhetorical device for calling attention to the existence or reality of the sadness. No. (1) is therefore the form to be used in everyday speech when the giving of information merely is the purpose of the speaker. No. (2) is the language of poetry, maxims, proverbs, and impassioned speech and is analogous to such inversions as "Great is Diana of the Ephesians," and the like in English, Is mor Diana nan Ephesianach.

Definite Noun (Subject) and Indefinite Noun and Adjective (Predicate).

349. When a sentence contains a definite noun as the subject and an indefinite noun with an adjective as the predicate, we have three forms which we can use in Gaelic, according to the impression we wish to convey.

"James is a strong man" can be translated (1) Tha Seumas 'na dhuine laidir; the meaning of which is that "James has become—has grown to be—a strong man."
(2) *Is duine laidir Seumas*; here we take James as we find him, and do not convey that he was at one time not so strong. He belongs to the species of strong men and is not an ordinary man. The emphasis in this sentence is on the *laidir*, and to make this emphasis more marked, the words are usually placed in a different order—(3) *Is laidir an duine Seumas*; notice the use of the definite article *an*, a literal translation of the phrase being "Strong is the man James." In this construction we are much more impressed by his strength. Sentences of this latter form therefore are translated by detaching the adjective from the English predicate and making the noun follow it in the definite form.

350. In the affirmative question "Is James a strong man?" we can only convey the idea of (1) quality, or (2) species; we cannot say we are (3) impressed with his strength when we are merely inquiring about it. Neither can a negative sentence convey this third meaning. When, however, we have negative question forms, these do express feeling or impression about the subject and are equivalent to an exclamation. "Isn't James the strong man?" is equal to saying "What a strong man James is!" *Nach laidir an duine Seumas?* The idea therefore of "feeling" and "impression" is confined to affirmative statements or negative questions.

It should be noted while we are talking of negative questions that sentences of "feeling" or "impression" like "How cold the water is!" "How nice the house is!"; "How heavy the book is!"; "What a strong man James is!"; can all be translated in this manner by means of the negative question.

351. Translate into Gaelic using the verb *tha* and *is* alternately:—

1. The dogs are clever.  2. Clever are the dogs.  3. The hero was brave.  4. Brave was the hero.  5. The bridge was steep.  6. Steep was the bridge.  7. The horse is swift.  8. Swift is the horse.  9. The primrose is yellow.  10. Yellow is the primrose.  11. The clouds are black.  12. Black are the clouds.  13. The wind is strong.  14. Strong is the wind.  15. The lamb is young.  16. Young is the lamb.  17. The dog is faithful.  18. Faithful is the dog.  19. I am happy.  20. Happy am I.  21. The brown dog is fierce.  22. Fierce is the brown dog.
LESSON XXX.

Comparison of Adjectives.

352. There are two kinds of Comparison, the one a comparison of equality, the other the comparison of inequality; because all things are in some respect alike or unlike.

The Comparative of Equality.

353. What we may term a comparison of equality is when two or more articles are compared as having an equal degree of the quality denoted by the adjective. In Gaelic the ordinary or positive form of the adjective is used, preceded by the conjunction cho and generally followed by ri, ris, le, etc. (pars. 633-4-5).

Tha ise cho glic riutsa, she is as wise as you.
Tha Iain cho ard ri Seumas, John is as tall as James.
Tha mo thigh cho ard ri ur tigh-se, my house is as high as your house.
Tha Seumas cho laidir ri Iain, James is as strong as John.
Tha e so cho geal ris an t-sneachda, this is as white as snow.

The Comparative of Superiority.

354. The comparative form of the adjective must be used when in comparing two objects, one object is said to possess more than the other of the quality mentioned.

355. The adjective has only one form for both comparative and superlative, and this form is the same as the genitive singular feminine in e final; as

ban, fair. baine, fairer. dubh, black. duibhe, blacker.
trom, heavy. truime, heavier. geal, white. gile, whiter.

356. Further examples of the formation of the genitive singular feminine, which, as already stated, is the same as the comparative form of the adjective, will be found in par. 332.

357. The comparative adjective is not inflected for case or number, but suffers aspiration like any other adjective.

358. The comparison when made by the verb is is followed by na, "than."
Is gile mo lamhsa na do lamhsa,   my hand is whiter than your hand.
Is gile a' ghrian na a' ghealach,  the sun is brighter than the moon.
Is baine Seumas na Iain,          James is fairer than John.
Bu bhaine Seumas na Iain,         James was fairer than John.
Bu ghnile e na sneachda,         It was whiter than snow.
An truime a' chlach so na i sin?  is this stone heavier than that?

359. When any other part of the verb bi (except is) is used in a comparative, we require to use a relative clause, the comparative adjective being preceded by na's (compounded of the relative phrase an ni a is, "the thing which is") except in a past tense where na bu is used. Both forms being followed by na " than."

Tha Iain na's baine na Seumas,       John is fairer than James.
Bithidh Seumas na's aird na Iain,  James will be taller than John.
Bha Iain na bu bhaine na Seumas,    John was fairer than James.
Bha e na bu mhilse na a' mhil,     It was sweeter than the honey.
Tha e na's lairdre a' nis na bha e  he is stronger than ever he was.
riamh,
Tha e na's fhèarrr na Iain,          he is better than John.

360. When translating an English adjective in the superlative degree we use the assertive form of the verb is, but we also put the sentence into a relative form. We use as the relative form of the verb is to precede the superlative when present time is spoken of, and a bu when past time is spoken of. The superlative relative requires the presence of the definite article in front of the nouns; in this it specially differs from the comparative; a proper noun is definite without the article. Thus:—"the tallest man" is translated am fear as airde," the man who is tallest." The superlative can be shown in the greatest degree of quality when comparing three or more objects by being followed with a prepositional phrase.

Is e Seumas as baine,              James is the fairest.
Is e Seumas as baine do'n         James is the fairest of the family.
teaghlach.
B'e Seumas a bu bhainide'n teaghlach James was the fairest of the family.
Is e sud an tigh as motha anns    that is the biggest house in the town.
a' bhaile,
Is e am fear as fhèarr (note        he is the best man.
aspiration),
Is i a' bheinn as airde anns an    it is the highest mountain in the
t-saoghal,
361. Note for guidance:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gaelic</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>na's</td>
<td>as</td>
<td>as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mor</td>
<td>greater</td>
<td>gros</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na's mo</td>
<td>greatest</td>
<td>plus gros</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>as mo</td>
<td></td>
<td>le plus gros</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Gaelic.**

**English.**

**French.**

The Comparative of Inferiority.

362. The comparison of inferiority is very similarly made with na's and the comparative lugha "less" = "least."

'S e Iain am fear as lugha
de'n triuir.
Tha a' ghealach na's lugha
soillse na a' ghrian,

*John is the least of the three.*

*the moon is less bright than the sun.*

363. Intensive particles, such as ro, glé, fior, air, leth, anabarrach, are frequently placed before adjectives in their simple form, to increase their signification; as ro mhath, very good (too good); anabarrach mor, exceedingly great (par. 620-1).

A Verbal Adjective.

364. Some monosyllabic adjectives admit of a verbal form compounded with the verb is and the prepositional pronoun formed from de. This is really not a second form of the comparative, as Stewart and other grammarians make out, being only an idiomatic combination which has nothing to do with the comparative adjective, as can be illustrated thus:—is feairrde thu sin, "thou art the better of that," can be resolved into is fearr tu deth sin, from which we can clearly see that feairrde is not a second form of the comparative (par. 604e).

B' feairrdd mi sin,
Nach bu mhisde e sin ?
Is truimide am poca,
Is beag is misd thu sin,
Cha mhisde leam e 'bhi mar
sin.

*I was the better of that.*
*was he not the worse of that?*
*the bag is the heavier of it.*
*it's little you are the worse of that.*
*I do not think he will be the worse of being so (so=like that).*

365. A derivative noun may be formed from the comparative by changing the final e into id, as:—

| baine, fairer. | teotha, hotter. | daoire, dearer. |
| bainid, fairness. | teothaid, heat. | daoirid, dearness. |
Some of the commoner adjectives are irregular in the formation of their comparative form:

**Positive.**

beag (*bpäh*) little.
cumhang (*kooygh*), narrow.
duilich (*dtoolńch*) difficult.
fagus (*fağkńś*) near.
furasda (*fоorastń*) easy.
goirid (*gőrytch*), narrow.
toigh (*toyk*) loved, fond.
laidir (*llāćhńur*) strong.

**Comparative.**
lugha (*lőgh-ńń*) less.
cuinge (*kooyngń*)
dulghe or dorra (*dtoo lýńń*)
faise (*fąshńś*)
fhasa (*assń*)
giorra (*gyrrń*)
annsa (*aunsń*) dearer.
leatha (*lyă-ńń*)
fearr (*fydrń*)
mor or motha (*mńń-hńń*)
miosa (*myss-ńń*) worse.
teotha (*tcho-ńń*)
do cha (*dochńń*) fondest.
treise, tresa (*trśhńś*) or
laidire (*llāćhńńrń*)

**Vocabulary.**

Mor nf. Sarah.
teaghlaich (*tchоwńńtńch*) nm. a
Glascho nm. Glasgow.
Alba (*Aliipń*) nf. Scotland.

duineideann (*duńńtńńchńń*) Edinburgh.

1. Is e Iain a b' airde de 'n teaghlaich. 2. Is e so a' chraobh as motha
anns a' choille. 3. Tha Seumas na's airde na Iain. 4. Bha Mor na
bu lugha na Seumas. 5. Is i Mor as sine de 'n teaghlaich. 6. A'
chlaich as truime anns an achadh. 7. An duine as beartiche ann an
Albainn. 8. Is lugha caora na bo. 9. Is miosa Mor na Seumas.
Is faigse a' chraobh so na a' chraobh sin. 13. Is gile do lamhsa na
mi sin. 16. An Iain as sine anns a' chuideachd? 17. Is e Duneide-
anns a boidhche na Glascho. 18. Cha misde e sin. 19. Tha
Seumas sean ach is i Mor as sine. 20. Tha an t-each sgith ach tha
an cu na's sgithe. 21. Thainig an tuathanach agus bhrist e casan
nan con.

368. Translate into Gaelic:

1. John is taller than James. 2. He is the eldest of the family. 3.
He is not the eldest of the family. 4. Sarah is older than him.
5. Sarah will be the eldest of the family. 6. Is John not older than
James? 7. John is younger than James. 8. The sheep is smaller
than the cow. 9. Is Edinburgh prettier than Glasgow? 10. Edin-
burgh is smaller than Glasgow. 11. Glasgow is larger than Edinburgh but Edinburgh is the prettier. 12. The stones in this field are heavier than those in that field. 13. They are not the worse of that. 14. The highest trees are on that hill. 15. The biggest river in Scotland. 16. The highest mountain in Scotland. 17. The moon is not as bright as the sun. 18. What is better than gold? 19. The worst boy in the school. 20. The shortest day in the year. 21. That is the biggest house in the town.

370. Examination Questions:—
1. What does the comparative express, and how many comparatives are there?
2. How do you express a comparative of equality?
3. What is to be observed when the preposition de is before a substantive in a comparative sentence?
4. What is the positive?
5. How do we translate the English termination "est" in a comparative?
6. Mention three adjectives which form their comparative irregularly.

LESSON XXXI.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

371. Numerals, Cardinal and Ordinal, precede their nouns; as tri eich, three horses; an ceathramh fear, "the fourth man"; except when the cardinal number is employed to designate a particular person; as Righ Tearlach a Dhà. "King Charles the Second."

372. The cardinals have two forms, one form to be used with nouns—these become simple adjectives; the other form is used without a noun and really become nouns themselves. The following is a selected list of the former, illustrative of the various changes which take place when governing a masculine noun.

After aon, dá, fichead, ciad, mile, and any multiple of these, the noun is in the singular form. These numerals only seem to take the nominative singular—fichead fear, ciad fear. They are in reality substantive nouns governing the genitive case, so that fear in fichead fear is not nominative singular but genitive plural.
1 man. aon fhear (ön er).
2 men. da fhear (dta er).
3 " tri fir (tree fyr).
4 " ceithir fir (kā-yr fyr).
5 " coig fir (ko-yk fyr).
6 " se or sia fir (shā or sheeū fyr).
7 " seachd fir (shachk fyr).
8 " ochd fir (ochk fyr).
9 " naior fir (nooū fyr).
10 " deich fir (tchāy ch fyr).
11 " aon fhear deug (ön er tchāk).
12 " da fhear dheug (dā er yāk) \(2 + 10 = 12\).
13 " tri fir dheug.
20 " fichead fear (feechutt fer).
21 " aon fhear ar fhichead (ön er āreechyūtt).
22 " da fhear ar fhichead. \(2 + 20 = 22\).
23 " tri fir ar fhichead (tree fyr āreechyūtt).
30 " deich fir ar fhichead, or deich fir fhichead.
31 " aon fhear deug ar fhichead.
32 " da fhear dheug ar fhichead \(2 + 10 + 20 = 32\).
33 " tri fir dheug ar fhichead.
40 " da fhichead fear (dāa eechyūtt fer).
41 " da fhichead fear 's a h-aon (ū hōn).
42 " da fhichead fear 's a dha (ū ghā).
50 " da fhichead fear 's a deich, or leth chiad fear (lyā-chemyūtt fer).
60 " tri fichead fear (tree feechyutt fer).
61 " tri fichead fear 's a h-aon.
62 " tri fichead fear 's a dha.
80 " ceithir fichead fear \(4 \text{ twenties} = 4 \text{ score} \).
90 " ceithir fichead fear 's a deich.
100 " ciad fear (keeūt fēr).
101 " ciad fear 's a h-aon.
150 " ciad gu leth fear (keeūt goo lyā fer).
200 " da chiad fear (da chyyutt fēr).
1,000 " mile fear (mylū fēr).
1,915 " mile fear, nai ciad 's a coig deug, or mile, nai
    ciad is coig fir dheug.
14,000 " ceithir mile deug fear.
100,000 " ciad mile fear.
1,000,000 " muillion fear (moolyiin fēr).

373. **Gu leth** when used with the higher numerals signifies "one half more"; ciad gu leth, "one hundred and a half," "150"; mile gu leth, "one thousand five hundred," "1500," or "a mile and a half"; but with the smaller numbers it means "one-half" only: tri gu leth, "three and a half," "3½"; lethchłach, "half-a-stone"; leth, one of a pair—leth chas "one foot."
Notes on the Numerals.

374. *Aon* aspirates all consonants except *l, n, r*; *d, t, s.*

- Aon bhean, *one woman.*
- Aon chraobh, *one tree.*
- Aon eile, *one other.*
- M' aon chearc, *my only hen.*
- 'San aon luing, *in the same ship.*

- Aon duine, *one man.*
- Aon shear, *one man.*
- Aon sam bith, *anyone.*
- Gach aon, *everyone.*
- Aon uair, *once, 1 o’c.*

375. *Da.* (1) Aspirates all consonants except *l, n, r.*

(2) Takes a dual number of the noun, a form which closely corresponds to the modern dative singular aspirated.

- Da righ, *two kings.*
- Da bhroig, *two shoes.*
- Da chloich, *two stones.*
- Da dhuine, *two men.*
- Da bhruig, *two shoes.*
- Da chloich, *two stones.*
- Da thig, *two houses.*
- Da each, *two brown horses.*
- Da uair, *twice, 2 o’c.*

(3) An adjective qualifying such a noun, whether it is masculine or feminine, is also aspirated. It is not inflected, remaining in the nominative case aspirated (or we might say the nominative singular feminine).

- Da chloich bheag, *two little stones.*
- Da fhear dheug, *twelve men.*
- Da bhradan mhor, *two big salmon.*
- Da each dhonn, *two brown horses.*

(4) In poetry the adjective sometimes takes the plural.

- Da chirc mhora, *two large hens.*
- Da nighinn bheaga, *two little daughters.*

(5) If the numeral *da* with its noun and adjective is preceded by a preposition, both noun and adjective take the dative case singular.

- Le da chloich bhig, *with two little stones.*
- Aig an da chailleig bhig, *at the two little girls.*
- Aig an da bhach bheag, *at the two little boys.*
- Do dha nighinn oig, *to two young daughters.*
- Fo dha bhord fhada, *under two long tables.*

(6) But when the noun after *da* is itself governed in the genitive by another noun, the government of the numeral *da* gives way to the stronger influence.

- Buinn mo dha bhroige, *the soles of my two shoes.*
- Siuil an da luinge, *the sails of the two ships.*
- Barran chluais duine, *the tips of a man’s two ears.*
- Cul a da laimhe, *the back of both her hands.*
- Clann an da mhna, *the children of both wives.*
- Mal an da thighe, *the rent of both houses.*
- Ceann an da mheoir, *the ends of the two fingers.*
376. **Deug.** (1) It is an adjective and always agrees with the gender of its noun.

(2) Of the numbers in which deug appears, namely 11 to 19, both inclusive, two of these, 11 and 12, take a singular noun. In 11, if the noun is masculine, deug remains unaspirated; but if the noun is feminine deug suffers aspiration unless the noun ends in a dental or lingual (d, t, s; l, n, r). In 12, the effect of da "two," which appears in this number, has been already shown.

- Aon each deug (m) eleven men.
- Aon chat deug (m) eleven cats.
- Da chu dheug (m) twelve dogs.
- Da bhriadan deug (m) twelve salmon.
- Aon chlus deug (f) eleven ears.
- Aon bhrog dheug (f) eleven shoes.
- Da chirc dheug (f) twelve hens.
- Da uair dheug (f) twelve hours, 12 o’c.

(3) The numbers 13 to 19 inclusive, take the noun in the plural. **Deug** is only aspirated in the case of nouns which introduce an i in their plural declension, generally masculine nouns (par. 336).

- Tri fir dheug (m) thirteen men.
- Tri cait dheug (m) thirteen cats.
- Seachd doruis dheug (m) seventeen doors.
- Coig bailtean deug (m) fifteen towns.
- Naoi brogan deug (f) nineteen shoes.
- Ceithir ba deug (f) fourteen cows.

(4) Notice that all the numbers 11 to 19 inclusive, place the noun between the digit and deug. Deug corresponds to the English termination "teen."

377. **Ar fhichead.** The cardinal numbers with a noun, from 21 to 30, require that noun placed immediately after the digit and before the termination ar fhichead. **Air,** or **ar,** is an aspirating preposition.

- Ceithir uain ar fhichead, twenty-four lambs.
- Tri brogan ar fhichead, twenty-three shoes.
- Tri brogan fhichead*, twenty-three shoes.
- Ceithir uain fhichead, twenty-four lambs.
- Da chirc fhichead (ar fhichead) twenty-two hens.
- Deich cearcan fhichead, thirty hens.

* Note that plural nouns of more than one syllable ending in n used thus do not aspirate **fichead.**
378. When dealing with numbers above forty, the easiest way for translating is to take—First, the number of score, then the noun, and finally, the remaining odds.

- **fichead** "20 = a score."
- **tri fichead**, "60 = three score."
- **65**; **tri fichead agus a coig** "three score and five."
- **65 horses**; **tri fichead each agus a coig.**
- **87 sheep**; **ceithir fichead caora agus a seachd.**
- **123 men**; **se fichead duine agus a tri** "six score men and three."

379. **Ciad (ceud)** is always aspirated after **aon, da, tri, ceithir** :

- **tri chiad fear**, "three hundred men."

**THE CARDINAL NUMBER AS A NOUN.**

380. When the cardinal number is used as a noun, the particle **a** is placed in front of the simple cardinal number; this particle aspirates **aon, da, and ochd.** Twelve numbers are illustrated herewith. After "forty" both forms are alike.

- **One**, **a h-aon (ü hōn).**
- **Two**, **a dha (ü ghā).**
- **Three**, **a tri (ü tree).**
- **Four**, **a ceithir (ü kāhyr).**
- **Five**, **a coig (ü ho yk).**
- **Six**, **a se, sìa (ü shā, sheēū)**

Mharbh e a dha (varu ă ă ghā), he killed two.
Righ Seumas a h-aon, King James the First.
Righ Tearlach a dha dheug, King Charles the Twelfth.
Thainig e le a h-ochn, he came with eight.
Chaidh iad le a h-aon deug air fhichead,

they went with thirty-one.

381. The cardinal numbers can also take the article: —**an aon** "the one"; **an da** "the two"; etc.

**PERSONAL NUMERALS.**

382. We have ten numerical nouns formed from the cardinal numbers used to refer to persons only. These, when followed by a noun, govern that noun in the genitive plural: —**ceathrar mhac** "four sons"; **coignear bhan** "five women."

- **aonar**, one (person).
- **dithis**, two (persons).
- **triuir**, three ".
- **ceathrar**, four ".
- **coignear**, five ".
- **seanar**, six (persons).
- **seachdnar**, seven ".
- **ochdnar**, eight ".
- **naonar**, nine ".
- **deichnear**, ten ".
The numerical noun **aonar** is used in several ways idiomatically as follows, and generally means “alone”:

- Duine ’na aonar, a man all alone.
- Chaidh mi aonar, I went alone (am = in my—*one person*).
- Rinn e so ’na aonar, he did this alone.
- Tha e leis fein, he is alone (with himself).

### The Ordinal Numbers.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ordinal Number</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>an ceud fhear</td>
<td>the first man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an dara fhear</td>
<td>the second man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an treas fhear</td>
<td>the third man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an ceathramh fhear</td>
<td>the fourth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an coigeamh fhear</td>
<td>the fifth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an seathamh fhear</td>
<td>the sixth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an seachdamh fhear</td>
<td>the seventh man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an t-ochdamh fhear</td>
<td>the eighth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an naoidheamh fhear</td>
<td>the ninth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an deicheamh fhear</td>
<td>the tenth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an t-aona fhear deug</td>
<td>the eleventh man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an dara fhear deug</td>
<td>the twelfth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an treas fhear deug</td>
<td>the thirteenth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an t-ficheamh fhear</td>
<td>the twentieth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an t-aona fhear fichead</td>
<td>the twenty-first man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an dara fhear fichead</td>
<td>the twenty-second man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an treas fhear fichead</td>
<td>the twenty-third man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an deicheamh fhear fichead</td>
<td>the thirtieth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an da thicheadhamh fhear  's a h-aon,</td>
<td>the fortieth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an da thicheadhamh fhear  's a deich,</td>
<td>the fifty-first man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an tri ficheadhamh fhear  's a h-aon deug,</td>
<td>the seventy-first man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an ciadamh fhear,</td>
<td>the hundred and twentieth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an se ficheadhamh fhear,</td>
<td>the hundred and twenty-third man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an se ficheadhamh fhear  's a tri,</td>
<td>the thousandth man.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an mileamh fhear,</td>
<td>an ceud is the only ordinal which aspirates the noun.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Exercises on the Numerals.

#### Vocabulary.

- **sgillin** (*skyllynn*) nf. a penny.
- **la, laithean** (*līd yūn*), nm., a day, days.
- **seachduin** (*shakhkūn*) nm. a week.
- **mios** (*myss*) nf. a month.
- **brog, -oige** (*brawk*) nf. a shoe, of a shoe.
- **mionaid, -ean** (*mi natch*) nm. a minute, minutes.
- **uair, -eain** (*ooʔr*) an hour, hours.
- **meadhon-la** (*mā-on llā*) nm. mid-day.
- **chaidh** (*chā y*) irr. v. past, went.
fagaidh (ják-y) v. fut. will leave.
theid (hāch) irr. v.f. will go.
thig (heek) irr. v.f. come or will arrive.
roimh (roi) prep. before.
paírce, pairce (pá yrk) nf. a park, of a park.
saighdear (sá yitchár) nm. a soldier.
cia meud? cia mheud? (ky mātt) how much, how many?*

386. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


387. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. There are nineteen sheep in that field, and there are eleven sheep in this field. 2. How many sheep are in these two fields? 3. Thirty sheep are in these two fields. 4. There are ten cows and two bulls in that park. 5. Three men and two boys are in that boat there. 6. They have four rods and two nets with them. 7. How many fish have they? 8. The shepherd and his three dogs are on the hill. 9. He has eighty-five sheep on that hill and ninety on that hill. 10. His fourth dog is lame to-day. 11. When will the train leave here? 12. The first train will leave at nine-thirty a.m. 13.

* Cia meud? “how much?” or literally “what quality, size or amount.” If to things for sale, it refers to price or value. If to man it refers to debt owed by him.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Gaelic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>How much is on the book?</td>
<td>Cia meud a tha air an leabhar?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What is the price for the book?</td>
<td>Cia meud a tha air im?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What is the price for butter?</td>
<td>Cia meud a tha ort?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>How much is on you?</td>
<td>Cia meud a thais ag mo thighearn’ ort-sa?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>How much do you owe?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>How much owest thou unto my Lord?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke xvi. 5.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Is there not one at eleven o'clock?  14. The second train will go at twelve mid-day.  15. It is only nine o'clock at present.  16. My watch is fifteen minutes slow.  17. There are twenty shillings in the pound, and twelve pence in the shilling.  18. How many pence are in the pound?  19. He had fifteen shillings and I had ten shillings.  20. How much had we?  21. This little boy has two feet and two hands.  22. He has two shoes on his feet.  23. The third man has six boys.

388. Correct the following and translate:—

aon ba, aon buth, aon dhuine, da casan, da daoine, da fichead, da miltean, da broige, tri cas, tri tasdan, aon deug fir, nao deug earba, mile caoirich, tri mile fir, a cheud fear, an ceud clach, a ceud duine, seachd caoraidh deug.

389. Examination Questions:—

1. Why should we write aon duine and not aon dhuine?  
2. Why should we not translate " men " in the plural in da dhuine?  
3. What is wrong with da shgillin; da broige; da choise.  
4. Why should we not say coig tasdain dheug?  
5. Is deug always aspirated?  
6. Does da always aspirate and cause aspiration?  
7. What is the difference in a dha and an da? Why are both not aspirated?  
8. What does a' cheud do that no other ordinal number does?

LESSON XXXII.

THE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

390. Personal pronouns agree with the noun for which they stand in gender number and case, and are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple</th>
<th>Emphatic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Singular</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st, <strong>mi</strong> (mee)</td>
<td><strong>mise</strong> (mēshū)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd, <strong>thu</strong> (oo)</td>
<td><strong>thusa</strong> (ōosū́)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd, <strong>e</strong> (ā)</td>
<td><strong>esan</strong> (essū́n)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>i</strong> (ee)</td>
<td><strong>ise</strong> (eesū́)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>Plural</strong></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st, <strong>sinn</strong> (sheēn)</td>
<td><strong>sinne</strong> (sheennyū́)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd, <strong>sibh</strong> (sheev)</td>
<td><strong>sibhse</strong> (sheev-sū́)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd, <strong>iad</strong> (eeült)</td>
<td><strong>iadsan</strong> (eeült sun)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

391. Each personal pronoun may be declined and each may take the emphatic form through all the cases.
1st Person Singular mi I.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>mi I.</td>
<td>mi I.</td>
<td>mi</td>
<td>mi I.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>mo my.</td>
<td>mo ... mo</td>
<td>mo ... mo</td>
<td>mo ... mo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>dhomh to me.</td>
<td>dhomhsa to myself.</td>
<td>dhome</td>
<td>dhome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>mi me.</td>
<td>mi fein</td>
<td>mi fein</td>
<td>mi fein</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1st Person Plural sinn we.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nom.</td>
<td>sinn we.</td>
<td>sinn fein</td>
<td>sinn fein</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>ar our, of us</td>
<td>ar ... ne ours.</td>
<td>ar ... ne ours.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dat.</td>
<td>dhuinn to us</td>
<td>dhuinne to us.</td>
<td>dhuinne to us.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acc.</td>
<td>sinn us.</td>
<td>sinn fein ourselves.</td>
<td>sinn fein ourselves.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

392. Mi and mise are aspirated after bu and cha in the tenses of the verb is.

393. Tu when nominative to a verb is always aspirated except with the verbs is and bu and sometimes with the relative future and subjunctive tenses of the active voice. In the accusative it is always aspirated.

bu tu it was thou. buailidh tu e, you will strike him.
bhuail iad thu, they struck you. bhuail thu e, you struck him.

394. The 3rd person singular pronoun used to be more inflected than we now have it. Nom. se, "he"; Acc. e "him." It is still heard in this nominative form in a few instances to mark a distinction, as :—bhuail se e, "he struck him"; chuala si e "she heard him."

395. The pronoun sibh "you" is frequently used in the singular number instead of thu, when addressing a person senior in age or in polite conversation, as :—Ciamar tha sibh ? "How are you?"

396. As there is no difference in Gaelic between the nominative and objective cases, the position in the clause must fix this, as :—bhuail e mi, "he struck me"; bhuail mi, "I struck him."

397. The pronouns have all an emphatic form which is most frequently used with the verb is.

398. The word fein or thein, corresponding to the English words "self" and "own," adds still more emphasis, as :—mi fein, "I myself"; sibh fein, "you yourselves"; iad fein, "themselves"; mo shluagh thein, "my own people"; mo chu thein, "my own dog."
399. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:

400. Translate into Gaelic:
1. I will be in town to-morrow. 2. It is wet now. 3. The boy was at the door. 4. You struck him last night. 5. He was there yesterday. 6. Did you strike him? 7. I threw a stone and it struck him. 8. The stone struck the girl. 9. She was at the door. 10. They went to the town to-night. 11. They are going to-morrow. 12. We will be there the day after to-morrow. 13. Were you at home last night? 14. I was. 15. You will be at home to-morrow. 16. I said she will not be there. 17. I was there myself last night. 18. I was not there to-day. 19. You said that you would be going this evening. 20. That book is mine and this is the boy’s. 21. It was there yesterday.

LESSON XXXIII.
Prepositional Pronouns.

401. All the personal pronouns unite with the prepositions, each compound forming a single word. In each case the preposition and the pronoun amalgamate in such forms as to be considerably and in some cases completely disguised.

402. These prepositional pronouns are of constant occurrence in the language—scarce a sentence in which they are not met with. They are therefore of great importance and the learner is well advised to get most of the more commonly used forms off by heart.

403. Each of these prepositional pronouns takes an emphatic increase or suffix -se, -sa, -san, -ne, and the whole word thus formed is called the emphatic form.

* thilig (thheelik) v. threw.
The Prepositional Pronouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prepositions</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>mi me</strong></td>
<td>tu thee</td>
<td>o him</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aig, at</td>
<td>agad</td>
<td>aige, at him</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air, on</td>
<td>ort</td>
<td>air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ann, in</td>
<td>annad</td>
<td>ann</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a, as, out of</td>
<td>asad</td>
<td>as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bho, o, from</td>
<td>bhuat</td>
<td>bhuaithe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de, of, off</td>
<td>diot dhiot</td>
<td>deth dheth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do, to</td>
<td>duit dhuit</td>
<td>da dha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fo, under</td>
<td>fothad</td>
<td>foidhe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu, gus, to, till</td>
<td>chugad</td>
<td>chuige</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>le, leis, with</td>
<td>leat</td>
<td>leis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mu, about</td>
<td>umad</td>
<td>umaid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ri, ris, to</td>
<td>riut</td>
<td>riut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>roimh, before</td>
<td>tromhad</td>
<td>roimhe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>thar, over</td>
<td>tharad</td>
<td>thairis air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tromh, through</td>
<td>tromham</td>
<td>tromhad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eadar, between</td>
<td>tromham</td>
<td>tromham</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Emphatic forms</th>
<th>agamsa</th>
<th>agadsa</th>
<th>aigesan</th>
<th>aicease</th>
<th>aagainne</th>
<th>agaibhse</th>
<th>acasan</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-sa, -san, -se, -ne</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The dative of the pronoun, i.e., the prepositional pronoun, must be used for "me," "him," "her," "us," etc. This can be seen by the sense.
Thoir dhomh freagairt, give me an answer.
Thoir dhomh leabhar, lend me a book.
Thug sibh uam-sa an leabhar sin. you have taken from me that book.
Thoir dhaibh an t-airgiod, give them the money.
Bheir mi dhuit e, I will give it you.
Thuir dhomh deoch, give me a drink.
Dh'innis e sgeul dhomh-sa, he told me a story.
Cuir chugam Htir, send me a letter.

406. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Tha leabhraichean againn. Do not be afraid.
2. Tha eagal orm. I was not afraid and I will not be afraid.
3. Thug mi aran da. The man was angry to-day.
4. Cuir uait an leabhar agus innis dhuinn sgeul no seinn oran. You were angry last night.
5. Cuir foidhpe do chota. I do not know him and he does not know me.
6. This house is mine.
7. He has a house.
8. I have a house, but it is not my own house.
9. If we had bread we would not be hungry.
10. Are you not hungry?
11. I am hungry.
12. Is it raining?
13. Was there any rain yesterday?
14. It will be wet here to-morrow, it was wet there to-day.
15. There is rain.
16. They have the books.
17. Tell them the story.
18. Do not put under me your hat.
19. I came before you last night.
20. You came between John and James.
21. They will be out of town to-day.
22. I will be with them in town the day after to-morrow.
23. We will go towards the town now.

407. Translate English into Gaelic:—
1. Do not be afraid.
2. I was not afraid and I will not be afraid.
3. The man was angry to-day.
4. You were angry last night.
5. I do not know him and he does not know me.
6. This house is mine.
7. He has a house.
8. I have a house, but it is not my own house.
9. If we had bread we would not be hungry.
10. Are you not hungry?
11. I am hungry.
12. Is it raining?
13. Was there any rain yesterday?
14. It will be wet here to-morrow, it was wet there to-day.
15. There is rain.
16. They have the books.
17. Tell them the story.
18. Do not put under me your hat.
19. I came before you last night.
20. You came between John and James.
21. They will be out of town to-day.
22. I will be with them in town the day after to-morrow.
23. We will go towards the town now.

LESSON XXXIV.
Possessive Pronouns.

408. The possessive pronouns or possessive adjectives, which are merely the genitives of the personal pronouns, are as follows:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(before a consonant)</td>
<td>(before a vowel)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mo (mé)</td>
<td>m'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do (do)</td>
<td>d'; t*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a (iù)</td>
<td>his.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a (iù)</td>
<td>a h- her.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* For note see following page.
409. These possessive pronouns are adjectival and precede their nouns. They cause aspiration of all aspirable consonants in the 1st and 2nd singular, and in the 3rd singular masculine.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Scottish</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mo chathair,</td>
<td><em>my chair.</em></td>
<td><em>Ce livre est à moi.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Do chu,</td>
<td><em>thy dog.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A mhac (vachk),</td>
<td><em>his son.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A mac,</td>
<td><em>her son.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ar n-athair,</td>
<td><em>our father.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>An gille,</td>
<td><em>their boy.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*D' fhalt (dalt),</td>
<td><em>your hair.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Athair (a'ür),</td>
<td><em>his father.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A h-athair,</td>
<td><em>her father.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bhur n-athair,</td>
<td><em>your father.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am bâta,</td>
<td><em>their boat.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

410. Observe that while the masculine a "his" aspirates a following consonant it does not aspirate a vowel, and again that a "her" aspirates a following vowel but does not aspirate a consonant.

411. The possessive pronouns do not attach the emphatic terminations as do the personal pronouns. If emphasis is to be shown the emphatic increase is attached to the noun which is qualified by the possessive, or if one or more adjectives are present it is attached to the last adjective.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Scottish</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Is e so mo leabhar-sa,</td>
<td><em>this is my book.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ur cat beag-sa,</td>
<td><em>your little cat.</em></td>
<td>&quot;This book is mine&quot; (=belongs to me).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

412. **Fein** combines with the possessive as with the personal pronoun, but here it means "own"; like the emphatic termination it is placed after the noun or last adjective if any are attached.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Scottish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mo mhac math fein,</td>
<td><em>my own good son.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

413. In English there are distinct forms of the possessive pronouns which can stand without nouns, "mine,""thine," "his," "hers," etc. In Gaelic we have no forms corresponding to these. When they are in the predicate after the verb "to be" we use in Gaelic the prepositional pronouns formed from le "with" (belonging to)† (par. 188).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Scottish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>This book is hers,</td>
<td><em>tha an leabhar so leatha-se.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>That hat is mine,</td>
<td><em>tha an ad sin leam-sa.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>These shoes are yours,</td>
<td><em>tha na brogan sin leibh-se.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Before vowel and f+vowel nouns do is often hardened to an original t and instead of d' fhalt we hear t' fhalt; t' athair "thy father"; except when preceded by a preposition ending in a vowel air t' each "on your horse" but do d' each "to your horse."

† cf. French idiom:—

"Ce livre est à moi." "This book is mine" (=belongs to me).
414. The possessive pronouns may be replaced by the prepositional pronouns formed from *aig*; "my dog" an *cu* *agam*.

415. These possessives are used with the verbal nouns to denote a passive meaning:
Chaidh e g’ a mharbhadh, *he went to his death.*
lit. *he went to his killing.*

416. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

417. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. My mother is at the door. 2. Is your dog there? 3. No, my dog is in the house. 4. My father is here now. 5. His son is not here. 6. Her son will be in the town to-morrow. 7. He is not there now. 8. Their boat struck a rock. 9. They had to come out of her. 10. They went to their death. 11. That hat is yours. 12. This house is theirs. 13. That is her coat. 14. I will go with you. 15. The book belongs to James. 16. I threw a stone and it struck his foot.

418. Correct these and translate:—
Mo falt, mo h-athair, do cu, do cas, an fear, am chu, ur thigh, mo brog-se, do suil-sa, ar bhàta-san, am n-athair, am mhac, bhur h-athair.

419. Examination Questions:—
1. What is the place of the possessive adjective?
2. Do possessives agree with the nouns they specify?
3. How do we express "my chair," "your chair," "his chair," "her chair"?
4. *Cathair* is feminine; now apply the same possessives to the masculine noun *falt* "hair."
5. Where do we put the emphatic increase when used with the possessive?
6. How do we translate the English possessive pronouns "mine," "thine," "yours," "hers"?
7. When do we translate "his" by a and when should we use *leis*?

**Prepositional Possessive Pronouns.**

420. There are two prepositional possessive pronouns in common use formed from the prepositions *ann* "in"
and aig "at." These are used in idiomatic phrases with the verbal nouns. These prepositional possessive pronouns have the same influence over the nouns which may follow them as the simple possessives exercise.

421. Ag.
   1st 'gam, at my. 'gar, at our.
   2nd 'gad, at thy. 'gur, at your.
   3rd 'ga, at his, or at her. 'gan, at their.

422. Ann.
   Singular.        Plural.
   1st 'nam, in my. 'nar, in our.
   2nd 'nad, in thy. 'nur, in your.
   3rd 'na, in his, or in her. 'nan, in their.

423. These prepositional possessives are used when in English the personal pronoun follows the participle or verbal noun (pars. 571-2).

   Tha an dealg so 'gam chiurradh. this pin is hurting me
   Tha sibh 'ga chaireadh, you are mending it (at its
                  mending).

424. The other prepositions are also used with the possessive, but they do not enter into such close union with them as aig and ann do; the elision of a final vowel being the only change effected.

LESSON XXXV.

IDIOMS OF THE VERB bi; bi with ann.

425. We have previously shown that the verbs tha, bha, bheil, etc., signify existence connected with locality, state, condition, and that they take the preposition or particle ann to strengthen them in that statement.

426. When the predicate is an appellative denoting something which belongs to the subject, the general term is limited by placing before it the prepositional possessive pronoun corresponding to the nominative.

   Tha e 'na gharadh, he is in his garden.
   Tha e 'na thighe, he is in his house.
   Tha e 'na bhàta, he is in his boat.
427. In these expressions the general term is limited to a particular instance of that which is denoted by it, viz.:—that which belongs to the subject. Thus the subject is in the locality denoted by the appellatives "garden," "house," etc., and particularly by the restricted definition "his garden."

428. The same idiom is used to declare the condition of the body or mind—physical, mental, or moral.

Tha e 'na shlainte,  he is well (in his health)
Tha e 'na chabhaig, he is in haste (in his haste).
Tha e 'na chiall,   he is in his senses.

The state which is defined by the term "health," "his health," or "the health which is peculiar to him."

429. We have already seen the relationship which connects men and things with a large portion of their conditions and belongings. As things or states were seen to affect us and to become related to us because they were "at us" or "with us" or "on us" so now *vice versa* things or states affect us and become related to us all the more because we are "in" them. They are grafted as living branches into the tree of our personality; or rather our personality is merged in them.

430. The same idiom is used to declare a man's outward attitudes.

Tha e 'na chadal, he is asleep (in his sleeping).
Tha iad 'nan seasamh, they are standing (in their standing, in their posture of standing).
Tha e 'na laighe, he is lying (he is abed).

431. Precisely the same idiom is used to express actual existence or what is predicated of or declared of the nominative case. Actual existence being a concrete term, the predicate by which it is expressed is a concrete term and not an abstract term. This is the strangest and most peculiar idiom yet noticed.

A man's office trade or relationship:—

Bha Iain 'na sheoladair,  John was a sailor (in his sailor).
Tha e 'na shaoir,       he is a joiner (in his joiner).
Tha e 'na mhinistear,  he is a minister (in his minister).
Tha e 'na dhuine,      he is a man (in the state denoted by the term man, "manhood")
Tha e 'na athair do'n teaghlach, he is a father to the family.
(lit.: he is in his father; in his relation of father).
Tha e 'na sheirbhiseach do Iain, he is a servant to John.
(lit.: he is in his servant, in his relation of servant to John).

432. Further examples of its use to declare a man's reputation, character, personal attributes, nationality, etc.

Tha e 'na ghaisgeach, he is a hero (in his hero)
Tha i 'na sgoilear, she is a scholar (in her scholar).
Tha e 'na fhirean, he is a just man (in his true one).
Tha e 'na groineach, he is a nobleman (in his honourable).
Tha e 'na dhruine uasal, he is a scholar (in his scholar).
Tha i 'na ghaisgeach, he is a hero (in his hero)
Tha e 'na dhruine uasal, he is a gentleman (in his man honourable).
Tha i 'na sgoilear, she is a scholar (in her scholar).
Tha e 'na dhruine uasal, he is a gentleman (in his man honourable).

433. Prof. Masson gives a helpful definition of this last idiom, that by converting the adjective descriptive of a man's abstract condition into a personal noun, it takes that personal noun, and so to speak plants the man in the middle of it. Thus while as in English, we say, tha an duine balbh "the man is dumb," yet by means of this idiom, we concrete and animate the man's abstract quality of dumbness, and, planting him in the heart of our creation, we say, tha an duine 'na bhalbhan "the man is in his dumb one," or as, owning the influence of this Gaelic idiom, we would say vulgarly, "he is a dummie."

434. Another similar Gaelic idiom in very common use may be illustrated here. We have shown that the man can exist "in his carpenter"; that the subject can exist in a quality; but in Gaelic a quality can also be said to exist in a subject. The "carpenter" can exist in the man, as well as the man "in his carpenter."

Is e saor tha annad, (lit.) it is a carpenter that is in you.
Cha'n eil innite ach a' ghlaic, she is but a silly woman.
435. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Tha e 'na oglach. 2. Tha e 'na chabhaig. 3. Tha mi 'nam gharadh.
4. Tha mi 'nam thigf. 5. Tha iad 'nam bâta. 6. Tha sinn 'nar cadal.
10. Tha e 'ga bhualadh. 11. Tha i 'ga bualadh. 12. An robh 'each gad bhreabadh?
16. Bha e 'na dhroch dhuine.

436. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. My horse is in the field but his is in his garden. 2. Her brothers are in your father's house.
3. They were on their ship. 4. James was a sailor. 5. They say John is a joiner.
6. She was striking him and he was striking her. 7. I was a stranger. 8. He is in his boat.
9. I am standing. 10. He was asleep in his house. 11. You are in haste. 12. I am well. 13. She was a cheat.
14. The boy was a fool. 15. He was a coward. 16. That man was a gentleman.

**Lesson XXXIV.**

437. **The Relative Pronoun.**

| a (iú)    | who, whose, whom, that. |
| an (iún)  | which, that (dative after a preposition) becomes |
| am (ium)  | which, that (dative) before b, f, m, or p. |
| na (nuh)  | what, that which. |
| nach (núch) | who not, which not, that not, but. |

438. As the relative a has no inflection for case, the construction or context must determine whether the relative is nominative to the verb which follows it, or is governed by it in the accusative, as:—*an gille a bhual mi* may mean either "the boy who struck me" or "the boy whom I struck."

439. The relative a is the same for each case.

*Nom. and Acc. a "who"; Gen. a "whose"; Dative a "whom."*

440. After all the cases the verb is aspirated and has a special form used in the future ending in *as or eas* (par. 510).

- Am fear a thuit, the man who fell.
- An gille a tha dubh, the boy who is black.
- Am mac a bha fuar, the son who was cold.
- Am fear a bhithesf faur, the man who will be cold.
- Am fear a bhitheadh faur, the man who would be cold.
- An gille a dh'ith an t-aran, the boy who ate the bread.
- Am fear a thogas a' chis, the man who collects the tax.
- A' chis a thogas a' chin, the tax which the man collects.
- An duine a dh'hosgail an dorus, the man who opened the door.
441. The genitive of the relative a is distinguished by the presence of a possessive pronoun thus:—"the boy whose book I took," **an gille a thog mi a leabhar** ("the boy of whom I took his book ")

An duine a fhuir thu a chuid, the man of whom you received his property.
Sud a’ bhean a bha sinn a stigh aice, yon is the woman in whose house we were.
Am fear a thainig a mhaic gu baile, the man whose son came home.

442. The dative is usually strengthened by a preposition.
Na daoine a dh’fhuirich thu aca, the men with whom you stayed.
An te a tha thu suirdhe oirre, the girl whom thou art courting.

443. In Gaelic the relative is frequently used adverbially in an explanatory way as in the phrase:—**Cia mar a tha sibh?** " How are you " (lit. " How is it that you are. ") (par. 450-1).

444. The only change for case in the relative a is in the dative after a preposition, where it takes the form of an, changing the n into m before b, f, m, or p. Prepositions which take an s before the definite article take it also in this position. The relative drops the a following vowels; in some places is represented by an apostrophe and sometimes all trace of it is omitted.

An obair ris an robh mi, the work at which I was.
An tigh anns am bi sinn, the house in which we shall be.
Am bord air am bitheadh e, the table on which it would be.
An t-eilean far am bheil iad, the island where they are.
A’ chiste air an do chuir mi e, the chest on which I put it.
An cupan as an ol mi, the cup of which I shall drink.
An gille bho’n d’thug mi a leabhar, the boy from whom I took his book.

445. The relatives an, am, a’, ’n, when coming immediately after a preposition and before a verb must not be mistaken for the article or the verbal interrogative particle.

446. The relative negative nach gives little trouble and may be illustrated in a few sentences. It is followed by the dependent form of the verb.
Am fear nach casual mi, the man who did not hear me.
Am bord air nach bitheadh e, the table on which it would not be.
An tigh nach do thog mi, the house which I did not build.
An obair ris nach robh mi, the work at which I was not.
Thubhairt e nach bithreamaid, he said that we would not be.

447. **Na “what” follows the construction of a relative, but has never any antecedent expressed. It is used like “that” and “what” in English (with an idea of totality).**

Chuala mi na thubhairt thu, I heard (all of) what you said.
Phaidh Iain na cheannaich e, John paid what he bought.
Fhuair mi na dh’iarr mi, I got what I asked.
An e sin na tha agad? Is that all you have?
Tha mi coma air son na chaill mi, I care not for what I lost.

448. **The Verb is in Relative Sentences.**

The Relative Forms of the Verb *is* are:—

**Present** *is, as* : **Past** *a bu* : **Neg. nach.**

*is* and *as* aspirate verbs with initial *f* followed by a vowel.

*bu* aspirates all aspirable consonants.

449. These forms are usually found with the comparative and superlative of adjectives and sometimes with the positive.

Is tu am fear as fhearr, you are the best man.
Bu mhise am fear a bu fhearr, you are the man who is best).
Tir nach beag, a land which is not small.
Am fear is aithne dhomh, the man whom I know.
Am fear is mo a tha ann diubh, the biggest man there is of them.
Am fear is righ an Albainn, the man who is king in Scotland.
Ciod is crioch araid do’n duine? what is the chief end of man?
A’ bheinn as aire a’ anns an t-saoghal.
B’i Mairi a b’aire de’n teaghlach Mary was the tallest of the family.

450. An English sentence containing a nominative case, verb and adjective, is often translated into Gaelic in a relative sentence. Take *tha mi tinn* “I am sick”; this can be reproduced in Gaelic in a peculiar idiom and one very often heard in Highland English as the effect of adopting the Gaelic idiom.* The Gael can lay special

---

* French:
  Qui est-ce qui vient de vous parler? Who has just spoken to you?
  (lit. who is it that comes to you speak)?
  Qu’est-ce que vous dites? What do (lit. What is it that) you say?
stress on the adjective by bringing it forward to the beginning of the sentence, thus:—**is tinn a tha mi** “I am (very) sick,” “it is sick that I am,” and so in the negative question **nach tinn a tha e?** “is it not sick that he is?”

451. Similarly “it is I who am here,” “it was I who was there.” In these English sentences when the second verb is in the past tense the introductory verb is also in the same tense. In Gaelic the introductory verb generally is in the present tense, though the second verb may be past or future tense.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Gaelic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Is mise a tha ann,</td>
<td>I am here = It is I who am here.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Is mise a bha ann,</td>
<td>I was there = It (is) was I who was there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nach tu a bha ann?</td>
<td>Is it not you that was there?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Is mise a bhitheas ann,</td>
<td>It is I who will be there.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

452. **Gu’n,** which is a relative conjunction is a contraction for **gu** “to, unto, with” and **an** the dative case of the relative **a.** It is used to signify a wish or idea and implies that a sentence which is not expressed precedes the clause it introduces.

(Is e mo mhiann-sa) gu’m bu slan a chi mi thu.  
(It is my wish) that I may see you well.

B’ fhéarr leam gu’n tigeadh tu.  
*I wish that thou would'st come* (lit.: I wish with that thou would'st come = I wish to the effect that you would'st come).

453. Similarly, the other prepositions combine with the relative:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Gaelic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>do’n</td>
<td>“to whom, to which.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mu’n</td>
<td>“about whom, before that.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fo’n</td>
<td>“under whom, under which.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o’n</td>
<td>“from whom, from that.”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

454. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Is e am fear a dh’ith an t-aran.  
2. Is e an gille a bha fuar.  
3. An duine a thug thu bhuaith a chuid.  
4. Cia mar a tha thu.  
5. Is e an gille a bhual mi.  
6. An obair ris an robh thu.  
7. Thubhart e gu’n robh mi tinn.  
8. An cupan as an ol thu.  
9. Am bord air nach bi e.  
10. Chuala mi na thubhart iad.  
11. An dh‘thubhart iad gu’n robh iad fuar?  
12. Caite am bheil an gille a fhuair an sgian?  
13. Nach eil e anns an stabull?  
14. Co bha anns an dorus?  
15. Is e so am fear nach gabh a’ bhean.  
16. Am fear nach cuala mi.  
17. An tigh anns an robh e.  
18. Co bha leis na gillean anns an achadh?  
455. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. That man paid what he got. 2. Who is he? 3. What is it? 4. He is the man who has the horse. 5. I slept in the house in which he was. 6. Who has that horse in the field? 7. Who lost the knife in the house? 8. Who is it that lost this knife in my house? 9. We saw the boy who was in the boat. 10. I was there. 11. It is my wish that you may see me well. 12. He will be the best man. 13. The highest mountain in Scotland. 14. What is the chief end of man? 15. That is not the house where we were. 16. That is the man who opened the door.

——

LESSON XXXVII.

456. INTERROGATIVE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.
Co ? (ko) who is ?; co e ? who is he ?; co i ? who is she.
The Gaelic verb is is completely eclipsed, but is still understood after the interrogative relative.
co dhuibh ? (ko yoo) which of them ? (properly of two).
c co aca ? (ko aach-kü) which of them ? among them ? (of many).
c co leis ? (ko lásh) whose ? (lit.: whom with ?).
c co sam bith (ko süm be) whoever, whatever (who in the world).
c ciod ? (küt) what is ? ci o d e so ? what is this ?
cia ? (ky) what ? which ? how ?
cia meud ? (ky mätt) how many ? how much ?
de ? (tchä) what ? (from ci o d) de tha so ? what is this ?

457. The English interrogative possessive "whose" is translated into Gaelic by the idiom "whom with".* (par. 188, 413 and note).
Co leis an leabhar so? whose is this book ?
Is leam-sa e, It is mine (with me).

458. Co and ci o d when occurring in the middle of a phrase are affirmative and not interrogative. Ciod is often followed by the relative a when affirmative, though this latter can be sometimes understood.
Cha n’eil fios agam co (a is) iad, I do not know who they are.
Chunnaic mi co (a) bha anns an I saw who was in (at) the door.
dorus.
Tha fios agam ci o d a ni feum da, I know what will do good to him.

459. Vocabulary.
mu, conj. (moo), about.
labhairt, vn. (lúv-úrtch) speaking.
soladaír (shyolláitür) a sailor.
maileid, nf. (mállatch), a bag.
caileag, nf. (kålük), a girl.
rinn, v. irr. p. (roynn), did.
sgeul, nm. (skáll), a story.
theich, v. p. (háych), ran away.

* French: A qui est ce livre? Whose (lit.: to whom) is this book?
460. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

461. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. Who is he?  2. I do not know who he is.  3. Do you know who is at the door?  4. Who is it?  5. The boy who broke the window is here now.  6. The girl whom you saw ran away.  7. Who did it?  8. Which of them did it?  9. What is it?  10. James gave it to me, but a man broke it.  11. He went into the house in which his sons were.  12. He bought the boat from a sailor who had no money.  13. The man from whom I got the story was a soldier, who was not young.  14. The man who struck me ran away.  15. Who was he?  16. I did not know him.  17. The boat of which you were speaking is on the shore.  18. Whose was it?  19. It would be the fisherman's boat.  20. Which of them said that?  21. Whoever said it ran away.  22. What is this?  23. It is a bag they gave me.  24. Which of them gave you that?  25. Whose is this?  26. Is it not yours?  27. No.

—

LESSON XXXVIII.

THE DEMONSTRATIVES.

462. The demonstratives are mostly used as adjectives to distinguish one or more objects from others spoken of, and point out their distance from and proximity to the speaker. They do not aspirate in any position, nor do they cause aspiration to other words.

so (shoh) this, these, here.
sin (shin) that, those, there.
sud (shoottl) yon, yonder, that, there (used as a pronoun).
ud (oottl) yon, yonder, that, there (used after a noun).

463. They are used as adjectives limiting a noun or pronoun as regards time or place. They are indeclinable for person or number and always follow the noun. The latter must always be preceded by the definite article.
An duine so, "this man" (the man here = close at hand).
An duine sin, "that man" (the man there = some distance away)
An duine ud, "yon man" (the man yonder = much further away)

464. They may be used as a pronoun or attached to a pronoun:—
Tha so math, this is good. Chi mi sin, I see that.
E so, this one, this person. I sin, that one.
Sin agad e, there you have it. Sin ri radh, that is to say.
Sud an t-aite, yonder is the place. Sud e, yonder he is.

465. They may be used after the prepositions:—
An so, here. Gun sin, without that.
Uaithe so, from here, hence. Mar sin, so that, like that.
Mar so, thus, in this manner. Mar sud, like yon.

466. A euphonic a appears when they are used after a preposition ending in an s.
As a sin, out of that. Leis a sin, with that.
Gus a so, until this, up till now.

467. Used adverbially preceding a definite noun, these demonstratives become indistinguishable from adverbs of place. The verb is is generally understood though omitted (par. 161).
So a' bheinn, this is the hill = here is the hill.
Sin am baile, that is the town = there is the town.
Sud na tughean, yonder are the houses.
Sin iad a' tigheinn, there they are coming; that is them coming.

468. You must always distinguish carefully between the demonstrative "that" and the relative "that."
Bhuail mi an t-each sin, I struck that horse.
Sin an t-each a bhual mi, that is the horse that I struck.
Is e an t-each sin a bhual mi, It is that horse that I struck.

469. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

470. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. This dog is black. 2. That dog is not black. 3. This is a white cow. 4. Yon cow is not white. 5. What is that? 6. Who is this?
7. It is that man.
8. This boy is wet.
9. He says that he was there.
10. With that I will go home.
11. What is that you have?
12. I do not know this dog.
13. This is not the book I found last night.
14. That is they coming from the town.
15. That is the town on the hill there.

471. Examination Questions:
1. Do demonstratives in Gaelic agree with the nouns which they serve to demonstrate?
2. When may we term the demonstrative an adjective?
3. Give an illustration.
4. When are demonstrative pronouns so called?
5. How are they used?
6. When do we translate "that" by sin and when by a?
7. How are they used?
8. What is the similarity between the Gaelic translation of "this" "that," and "here" "there"?

LESSON XXXIX.

472. Indefinite Pronouns, etc.

cach, the rest, the others; am measg chach, among the rest.
cach-a-cheile (kach-ū-chālū), one another, each other.
cuid (kootch), a share, some (followed by the genitive of nouns, but if the noun is definite, the preposition de, "of," is used before the article, and the noun is put in the dative):—cuid chlach, "some stones"; cuid de na clachan, "some of the stones"; tha cuid ag radh, "some are saying."

cuid na's mo, a greater share; more; cuid na's mo clachan, "more stones."
cuid as mo, the greatest share, most; cuid as mo de na clachan, "most of the stones."
cuid-eigin (kootch-ākin), some one (some certain one), somebody.
cuid-fein, own; own share. mo chuid fein, "my own."
eile (ālū), other (follows noun). fear eile, "another man."
eigin, some, any (follows noun). fear eigin, "some man."
feadhainn (fyāghynn), some people. feadhainn eile, "others."
fein (fān) (a) after a pronoun or prepositional pronoun means "self." mi-fein, "myself"; sinn-fein, "ourselves."
(b) after a noun preceded by a possessive pronoun means "own"; mo thigh fein, "my own house."
(c) after the prepositional pronoun le "with," "by," fein means "alone"—bha mi leam fein, "I was alone."

Cuid in these expressions signifies any indefinite number of a whole and cach (or an corr) all the rest of it.

Cuid as a noun is fem. and very irregular, see declension, par. 282.
Thoir do chach e, give it to the rest.
Thoir dhomhs'an corr, give me the remainder.
Vocabulary.

bheir (vār) irr. v., will give.
theid (hātch) irr. v., will go.
ni (nye) irr. v., will do.
leanaidh (lyāny) v., will follow.
ni, -thean, nm. (nyee), a thing, things.
cearr (kyār), adj. wrong.
obair (opūr) nf. work.

474. Read in Gaelic and translate into English: —
1. Cia meud craobh tha anns a’ gharaidh ? 2. De tha thu ag radh ?
3. Bha na gilean anns a’ phairc an de agus thilg iad clachan air cach-a-cheile. 4. Co bhirst an uinneag ? 5. Bha na h-uile a’ brist-
earth uinneagan. 6. Co air bith tha an so a nis, bithidh mi an sin an nochd. 7. Tha cuid ag radh gu’m bheil mi bochd. 8. Cha ‘n eil
fios againn. 9. Cuin a dh’ fhalbh thu. 10. Tha sinn ‘nar tigh fein.
11. Chaidh gach fear d’a thigh fein. 12. Tha chuid a’s mo de na
clashan mora anns an achadh sin. 13. Tha na h-uile de na clachan
Theid moran shluagh an sin a nis. 18. Bha na h-uile shluagh anns

* Fear (m) in the sense “one” is applied to all nouns masculine
whether signifying persons or things, and te (f) “one” is similarly
applied to all nouns feminine. te air bith any woman; te eiginn
some woman; some one (f); te eile another one (f).

475. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Some of the stones in this field are big, but the others are small. 2. There are more big stones in that other field. 3. Most of the stones here are big. 4. I have big stones in my own field. 5. All the stones in your own field are small. 6. I will be in his house to-night, but I will go to my own house to-morrow. 7. Some say that he was alone. 8. There was no* one there last night. 9. Many people were there yesterday, but everyone had gone away. 10. It is many a year back since many people were here. 11. What is that? 12. Whatever you will do others will do also. 13. Wherever you will go the rest will follow. 14. Most of these windows are broken. 15. Every window is broken now. 16. Which of the men will go? 17. Anyone of them is ready. 18. Some say he is a joiner. 19. Everyone is saying it now. 20. They are all wrong. 21. I did not know I was wrong. 22. What will you give for this dog? 23. That dog is not yours, it is my own dog.

476. "No" in these sentences* is translated by using an indefinite pronoun preceded by a dependent form of the verb and the negative cha. Observe the following examples where: "no" and "none" = "not any" "not one"; "nobody" by "not anyone"; "nothing" by "not anything"; "never" by "not ever."

Cha'n eil a h-aon gun choire, there is none without fault.
Cha'n eil dad an so, there is nothing here (not anything).
Cha'n eil neach sam bith an sin, there is nobody there (not anyone).
Cha robh a h-aon aig an tigh, there was nobody (no one) at home.
Cha'n abair mi dad, I will say nothing (not anything).
Cha'n fhaca mi riamh e, I never saw him.
Cha toigh leam neach ach thusa, I love nobody but you.

LESSON XL.

The Verb.

477. The Gaelic verb is very different from the English verb in form and structure, and is very closely allied to the Greek verb. The whole of the tenses of our Gaelic verb are formed from its root, which is the 2nd singular imperative, the order of command, as: — tog, lift (thou); buail, strike.
478. From this root, the conjugation of verbs is effected by prefixing particles, by occasionally aspirating an initial consonant, or by affixing a termination. Sometimes all these operate together, sometimes the particle and aspiration only, and sometimes the aspiration alone.

479. All verbs in the Gaelic language are regular, and have their tenses formed in exactly the same fashion, except the ten irregular verbs which agree to no rule, and of which a list is given, showing all their parts complete. Every verb is regular in the imperative mood.

480. There are two voices, an active and a passive. The active voice is that form of a verb which shows that the subject of the sentence stands for the doer of the action expressed by the verb. The passive voice is that form of a verb which shows that the subject of the sentence stands for the object of the action expressed by the verb.

481. Compare the two statements: bhuail mi and bha mi buailte. The same word is the subject of each sentence—the nominative to each verb. But in the first statement, the subject mi stands for the doer of the act of buailte, while in the second statement, the subject mi stands for the object, or receiver, of the act of buailte. In the first sentence, the verb is said to be in the active voice; in the second, it is said to be in the passive.

482. A sentence may be changed from the active to the passive form, by turning the object into the subject, and the subject into the object.

Act., they struck the table. bhuail iad am bord.
Pass., the table was struck by them. bhuailteadh am bord leotha.

483. The Gaelic verb has only two time tenses, viz., the past and the future, and it has another which, for want of a better name, may be called the subjunctive, translated by the addition of the word "would," as, "he would go."

484. The indicative mood is so called because it simply points out a connection or agreement between a subject and predicate. In Gaelic it has two forms, an independent and a dependent. Many grammarians show an interro-
gative and conditional form but all these are merely the dependent form used with the respective qualifying particles which effect this change of meaning.

485. The independent or absolute form simply makes a statement and is used in affirmative propositions only, as:—bhuail mi, “I struck”; bha mi a’ bualadh, “I was striking.”

486. The dependent or conjoint form is used in negative, interrogative, and conditional clauses after the particles (par. 494).

487. The subjunctive makes a statement, but it generally does this in a hesitating and uncertain manner. It expresses a condition, motive or wish. Used in its simple form it corresponds to the English tense formed by the auxiliary “would.”

488. The imperative mood expresses a desire, whether purpose, command, or request, as:—buaileam, “let me strike”; na h-abair facal, “speak not a word.”

489. The infinitive is hardly in the strict sense a mood at all, being properly the verb used as a substantive or verbal noun denoting the energy of the verb. These verbal nouns enter largely into the composition of the compound tenses, both active and passive. Preceded by the preposition ag, a’, “at,” they express continuous or progressive action in combination with the verb bi. As only the verb bi has a present tense, all other verbs mark present time by this means (par. 192). Preceded by the preposition air in a similar idiom they express a completed action.

Infinitive, a bhuailadh, “to strike.”
Compound present tense, a’ bualadh, “striking” (lit., at striking).
Compound perfect tense, air bualadh, “struck” (lit., after striking).

490. The verbal adjective is used with the substantive verbs bi, tha, bheil, etc., to express a form of the passive voice, as:—
Tha an dorus fosgailte, the door is open.

491. Observe that in the various tenses of the Gaelic verb (with the exception of the subjunctive and imperative) the termination of the verb throughout all the persons of
the same tense is the same in the singular and plural numbers. Hence the person of the verb is only known by its nominative.

492. The use of one sign to convey one idea is advanced in a book on speech recently published. The author says, "It is more logical to say I is, thou is, he is, than I am, thou art, he is, since logic demands that we should always use the same sign to indicate the same idea."* Again we have I love, they love, but he loves. The s in loves does not signify anything, he loves signifies no more than if we should say he love.

493. The verb bi, already given on page 16 and subsequent pages in all its details, is a good guide to the whole construction of a verb, and if carefully studied will help the pupil very materially to grasp and understand the various changes in the tense. It is as regards the future, subjunctive, and imperative a regular verb.

THE VERBAL PARTICLES.

494. The nature and effect of these will be already known to the student from their use with the verb bi in the earlier chapters, the following is a résumé.

an? Interrogative particle. Preceding a verb changes its meaning to ask a question. The n changes to m before b, f, m, and p; causes eclipsis. An has the effect of interrogation though the verb itself be omitted.

An tog sibh? will you lift?
Am buail sibh? will you strike.
An do bhuaill mi an dorus? did I strike the door.
An teid (tchatch) thu leam? will you go with me?
Am mi an duine? am I the man?
Cha'n aithnedhomh an teid thu, I don't know whether you will go.
Cha'n aithnedhomh an teid thu, each place where you go.

an? Interrogative particle. Preceding a verb changes its meaning to ask a question. The n changes to m before b, f, m, and p; causes eclipsis. An has the effect of interrogation though the verb itself be omitted.

An tog sibh? will you lift?
Am buail sibh? will you strike.
An do bhuaill mi an dorus? did I strike the door.
An teid (tchatch) thu leam? will you go with me?
Am mi an duine? am I the man?
Cha'n aithnedhomh an teid thu, I don't know whether you will go.
Cha'n aithnedhomh an teid thu, each place where you go.

cha "not." Cha simply negatives the meaning of the verb and is used in all the tenses except in the imperative, where we use na instead. Cha† aspirates the con-

* The Philosophy of Speech, by George Willis (1919).

† The initial aspiration of cha is due to a lost particle ni, no. In Old Gaelic we can trace it in nicon, nocha, no chon, etc., literally "not that." In the modern language the actual particle of negation
sonants g, c, m, p, and b excepting the verb bu; d, t, and s resist aspiration. Cha’n always aspirates f verbs, and the n is also retained before a vowel.

Cha’n fhosgail mi an dorus, I shall not open the door.
Cha seinn mi, I shall not sing.
Cha do thog mi, I did not lift.
Cha’n iarr mi, I will not ask.
Cha ghabh mi tuille, I will not take more.
Cha mhi, it is not I.
Cha bu tu, it was not you.

na The imperative negative particle, it being used only in the imperative mood to make an imperative prohibition, as:—na treig a’ Ghaidhlig, “forsake not the Gaelic”; na buail, “don’t strike.”

nach The interrogative negative particle, as it asks a question in a negative manner, as:—
Nach do thog iad a’ chlach? did they not lift the stone?
Nach do bhristeadh i? was it not broken?

ma Conditional particle “if”; it is used with the past independent and the future relative tenses of all verbs, and in the present and past independent tenses of the verb bi. It aspirates all consonants and requires dh’ before all vowels, as:—
Ma bhuailleas iad, if they will strike.
Ma dh’ iarras sibh, if ye will ask.
Ma tha mi, if I am.
Ma ’bhuail mi, if I struck.

na’n Conditional particle “if.” Complementary to ma. It is used where *ma is not used:—the past dependent and subjunctive tenses of all verbs, and the past dependent of the verb bi—robh. It does not cause aspiration.

Na’n robh mi, if I was.
Na’n tiginn, if I would come.
Na’n do bhuail e, if he did strike.
Na’n d’ol mi, if I drank.
Na’m bitheadh e, if he were.
Na’n do ghlacadh e, if he would be caught.

has been lost and cha and cha’n remain in appearance a negative but etymologically introductory of a dependent clause. That the n of cha’n is organic is evident when it is still retained before vowels, and also from the fact that cha does not aspirate d, t, or s.

* For note see following page.
mur Conditional negative particle “if not.” It is used in all the tenses, of the dependent form, as:—
   Mur gluc mi, if I will not catch.
   Mur glacteadh iad, if they were not caught.
   Mur (an) do bhuail mi, if I did not strike.

ged (a) Conditional particle “though” “although.” It is used with the independent forms of the verb bi—tha, bha, and with the independent forms of all other verbs in the past, subjunctive, and future relative tenses. It aspirates all aspirable consonants and requires dh' before vowels (ged a being ge+do; it is do which causes aspiration). This a is a euphonic particle and not necessarily the relative, though it claims the rights of the relative as regards the form of the verb which follows it in the future.
   Ged a tha mi, though I am, although I am.
   Ged a bha mi, though I was.
   Ged a thogas mi, though I will lift.
   Ged a dh' iarras mi, though I will ask.

ged nach Conditional negative particle “though not,” “although not,” used thus:—
   Ged nach do bhual e, though he did not strike.
   Ged nach glacar an duine, though the man will not be caught.

gu'n A relative conjunctive particle serving to introduce a dependent clause. Its antecedent may or may not be expressed (par. 452).
   Thubhairt e gu'n do thog e iad, he said that he lifted them.
   Gu'm buail mi an dorus, that I shall strike the door.

nach A negative relative conjunctive particle “that not,” “who not,” serving to introduce a dependent negative relative sentence.
   Thubhairt e nach do thog e iad, he said that he did not lift them.
   An duine nach do thuit, the man who did not fall.

*Synopsis of what may be called the “Conditional Mood.”
Consonant verb, Cons. verb (f+ vowel) Vowel verb,
   bi be faisg squeeze. ol drink.
   ma tha mi ma bha mi ma dh'fhasg mi ma dh'ol mi
   ma n' robh mi ma n' d'fhasg mi na'n d'ol mi
   ma bhitheas mi ma dh'fhasgeas mi ma dh'olas mi
   na'm bithinn na'm faisginn na'n olainn
   if I am, was, if I squeezed, if I drank, etc.

Pres. Indpt., ma tha mi
Past Indpt., ma bha mi
Past Dept., ma n' robh mi
Fut. Rel., ma bhitheas mi
Subjunctive, na'm bithinn
495. It will be noticed that nach has three different meanings, but no ambiguity need arise, as if it is the interrogative negative it comes at the beginning of the clause or sentence without an antecedent; if the conjunctive negative it follows a verb; and if the relative negative it follows its noun.

Nach buail sibh?  will you not strike?
Thubhairt e nach do bhual e, he said that he did not strike.
'S e sin an duine nach do thuit, that is the man who did not fail.

**Formation of the Tenses.**

496. The changes on the termination are made to one model and by the same rules, but in order to illustrate the initial changes it may be convenient to arrange all verbs into three classes according as they begin with a consonant, a vowel, or an f, as vowels are unaspirable, and f when aspirated is silent, and thus the verb would in this case begin with a vowel sound, and must be treated accordingly. Their chief difference consists in the use of the particle do which aspirates the verb, and which is itself aspirated and contracted dh' and d'.

---

**LESSON XLI.**

**The Past Tense, Active Voice.**

497. In Gaelic, the past tense may fulfil more than one function. It may take the meaning of the aorist, the perfect, and even the pluperfect tenses as we know them in English.

498. The formation of the past tense is invariably (except in the case of the ten irregular verbs and the substantive verb) effected by taking the bare root preceded by the verbal particle do and appending the personal pronouns. Aspiration of an aspirable consonant of a root is caused by this particle. When the verb is used in an affirmative independent sentence the particle do is omitted before a verb beginning with a consonant; but the aspiration remains; thus from buail we would have do bhual mi or usually bhual mi, bhual thu, etc.
499. But if the root verb begin with a vowel, the particle is not omitted as otherwise there would be no difference between it and the future dependent tense, for aspiration of a vowel cannot otherwise be shown. The aspiration is thrown back on the particle do and its vowel is elided. Thus the past tense of innis “tell” is dh’innis mi “I told.” As already stated a root with initial f is treated as if it began with a vowel, thus, fag “leave” becomes dh’fhas mi (ghâk) “I left.”

1. buail mi dh’innis mi dh’fhas mi
2. buail thu dh’innis thu dh’fhas thu
3. buail e dh’innis e dh’fhas e
   etc. etc. etc.

500. In the dependent tense forms, the particle do is retained before the consonants; contracting to d’ before vowel and f verbs; causing the latter to also aspirate.

Cha do buail mi, Cha d’innis mi (tchynnish), Cha d’fhas mi (dtak)
I did not strike. I did not tell. I did not leave.

Further ex. —

Nach do thuit a’ chraobh?
An do mharbh an duine am fiadh?
An d’ol an cat am bainne?
Nach d’ iarr sibh (tchurr),
Cha d’ fhas e mor (dtâs),
Cha d’ iarr e orm,
did the tree not fall?
did the man kill the deer?
did the cat drink the milk?
did you not ask?
he did not grow big.
he did not ask me.

Past Tense, Passive Voice.

501. Consonant verbs aspirate the root and affix adh (eadh); vowel verbs prefix dh’ and affix adh; f verbs combine both methods by prefixing dh’ aspirating and affixing adh. The termination eadh stands merely by orthographical rule for adh (pars. 33-4-5).

Bhuailadh mi Dh’innseadh dhomh, Dh’fhasadh mi (ghâk UGH)
I was struck. I was told. I was left.

502. The dependent tenses are formed by prefixing do, d’, and affixing adh (eadh).

Cha do bhuailadh mi,
Cha d’innseadh dhomh (tchynnshugh),
Cha d’fhasadh mi (dtâkhugh),
Nach do bhriseadh e?
An do bhuailadh e?
Nach d’fhasadh e air a’ bhord?
I was not struck.
I was not told.
I was not left.
Was it not broken?
Was he struck?
Was it not left on the table?
503. **Vocabulary.**

- **tuit** (ttoooytch), fall.  
- **ith** (ee), eat.  
- **tog** (took), lift.  
- **brist** (bryst), break.  
- **leugh** (llyd), read.  
- **fass** (fás), grow.  
- **chunnaic** irr. v. (*choonnyk*), saw.

504. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


505. Translate English into Gaelic:—

1. I told a story.  2. He struck the door.  3. I left the book on the table.  4. I did not read the book.  5. When did you leave it?  6. I left it on the table in the house last night.  7. It was the big book.  8. I did not break the window.  9. The window was broken by a big man who left this hammer here.  10. Was it not some bad boys who broke this window?  11. Was it not broken with that hammer?  12. The door fell and it broke.  13. Did I tell a story?  14. You told a story to them.  15. You did not tell (to) us a story.  16. Did you read that book?  17. Did he break the window?  18. The window was struck with a stone.  19. The bread has been eaten by that boy.  20. The young man has eaten some bread.  21. Did the boy not eat the bread?  22. The boy lifted it from the table.  23. It fell on the floor.  24. Was the dog not struck by the boy?  25. The boy struck the dog with a stick.  26. Have you asked him?  27. I asked the little boy this morning.  28. If the boy did not strike it, who did?

506. Write in your note book the complete past tense of the verbs **tuit**, **ith**, and **fas**. Repeat the same verbs with the particles **cha**, **nach**, **nam**, and **mur**.

---

**LESSON XLII.**

**FUTURE TENSE.**

507. In the future tense of the active voice the verb has three forms—the independent, the dependent, and the relative.
508. The independent form is made by adding idh to the root (aidh to correspond to a broad vowel).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cuiridh mi</td>
<td>I will put.</td>
<td>olaidh mi</td>
<td>I will drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cuiridh thu</td>
<td>you will put.</td>
<td>olaidh thu</td>
<td>you will drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cuiridh e</td>
<td>he will put.</td>
<td>olaidh e</td>
<td>he will drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>etc., etc.</td>
<td></td>
<td>etc., etc.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

509. The dependent form is the same as the simple root verb with the addition of the particles. No aspiration except after cha.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>an cuir mi</td>
<td>shall I put?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha chuir mi</td>
<td>I shall not put.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ged nach freagair mi</td>
<td>although I will not answer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an ol mi</td>
<td>shall I drink?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha'n ol sinn</td>
<td>we shall not drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nach buail mi</td>
<td>that I shall not strike.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu'm buail mi</td>
<td>that I shall strike.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur (am) buail mi</td>
<td>if I shall not strike.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

510. The relative future as the name we give it implies is generally used after the relative pronoun, which whether present or understood causes aspiration of the root verb. The relative future ending is as, or eas to correspond to a narrow vowel. The aspirated particle dh' is retained before vowels and f (pure) but it has now no effect save for euphony having lost all trace of a time distinction.

511. Examples of the use of the relative form. It is used after a relative pronoun (including an adverbial relative) which as in English is often understood, or after the conjunctive particles ma “if”; o, o'n “since.”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ma chuireas mi</td>
<td>If I will put.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma dh' olas mi</td>
<td>If I will drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma dh' fhagas mi</td>
<td>If I will leave.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ma ghlac sin e</td>
<td>the man whom I will lift, or the man who will lift me.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ma dh' olas e am bainne</td>
<td>if I will catch him.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am fear a ghlacas iad,</td>
<td>if he will drink the milk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am fear nach glaic iad,</td>
<td>the man whom they will catch, or the man who will catch them.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mu na h-uile ni a shaoileas iad,</td>
<td>the man whom they will not catch, or the man who will not catch them.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cuin a bhuaileas mi?</td>
<td>concerning everything they can think of.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>when shall I strike? (lit., what is the time such as that I shall strike at?)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
whenever I shall strike.
they will not do but what is right.
whenever this happens.
whenever you think.

512. The future relative is used when an uair a “the hour in which” (a being the adverbial relative) indicates indefinite frequency.

513. It may be appropriate here to notice a usage of the future in Gaelic where in English we employ the present. When an action or state is represented as being habitual or uniform, involving, for instance, such an idea as that expressed by the term “law of nature,” then Gaelic uses the future, thus, eiridh a’ ghrian “the sun rises,” literally “the sun will rise.” An event that happens indefinitely often the inference is that it will happen again, the uniformity of nature is involved.

With possibly the exception of the verb bi and another* there is no present tense in Gaelic† and there are many other languages similarly placed. Time being like space, continuous and uninterrupted, it is divisible in idea only. Present time does not exist any more than a mathematical point can be composed of parts. What we call present time is only the intermediate limit which the mind fixes between the past and the future. Every portion of time that we can mention—a year, a month, a week, an hour, a minute—is composed of past and future time. When we say “this hour” the whole hour is not present at once, it is obvious that a part is past and a part future. Again, if we connect actions with the division of time, it is obvious that actions can only be of the past and future. “I write a letter.” The whole act of writing the letter is not present at once, it is composed of the part written and the part to be written, that is of past and future action. Although you have just read these lines, you use the past tense in saying so. These are illustrative sentences of the invisible line which separates past and future time, the present must be the realisation of, or won from the future. Gaelic uses the future form in this manner for the expression of the continuous present, movable and always moving into the future.

**Future : Passive Voice.**

514. The future passive of all verbs is formed alike by adding ar (ear) to the root.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Original</th>
<th>Future Passive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Togar a’ chlach,</td>
<td>the stone will be lifted.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>An togar i ?</td>
<td>will it be lifted ?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* chi mi “I see” or “I will see.”
† Except in the progressive form, Lesson XXI.
Nach ithean t-arain? will the bread not be eaten?
Bristear an uinneag. the window will be broken.
An olar an tuisge? will the water be drunk?
Cha bhuallear mi, I shall not be struck.

515. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Cuiridh mi an t-arain air a' bhord. 2. Cha chuir mi an sin e.
3. Ma chuireas togaidh-se e. 4. An do thog iad na clachan?
9. Buailidh mi an t-each. 10. Nach buail thu an t-each sin?
11. Ma dh' fhasas mi an cu am buail thu e?
12. Am fear a thogas mi. 13. Thubhairt e gu'm buail e am bord.
14. Togaidh mi a' chlach so. 15. Bristear na clachan.
16. C'uine a dh' fhasas thu am baile?
17. Fagaidh mi am baile am maireach.
18. Cha 'n innis mi cuin a dh' fhasas mi so.
19. Is e am fear nach oladh am bainne.
20. 'Nuair a thachras sin an innis thu dhomh e?
21. An ithean t-arain?
22. Cha'n ithean ach olar an tuisge.
23. An ol thu am bainne so?
24. Cha bhristear an uinneag.

516. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. Will I put the bread on the table? 2. There is bread on the table.
3. I will not put it where he will lift it. 4. They will strike the door
with a stick. 5. Will they not break the door? 6. They will not
lift these stones. 7. If they will not lift these stones they will be
left there. 8. I will not lift the stones. 9. The stones will not be
broken. 10. John will break that window if he will throw stones.
11. The window will be broken. 12. I will put the stones away.
13. We shall not strike the window. 14. He is the man who will not
drink water. 15. Will he drink milk? 16. No. If he will not
drink milk who will drink it? 17. The cat will drink it. 18. It
will not be drunk by the cat. 19. That milk will not be good.
20. If you will put it on the table someone will drink it.

LESSON XLIII.
SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE.

517. The first person of this tense is a synthetic form and
is one of the few instances where it has not been superseded
by the form of the third person. The remaining persons
are indicated by one form with the addition of the pronoun.

518. The first person singular of consonant verbs aspirates
the root and adds the termination ain (inn). the first
person plural aspirates and adds amaid (eamaid). The
termination for the other persons is adh (eadh). Vowel
verbs prefix dh'; and f verbs prefix dh' and also aspirate the root.

_Sg._ 1. _thogainn_, I would lift.  _dh' innsinn_, I would tell.
2. _thogadh thu_  _dh' innseadh thu_  
3. _thogadh e_  _dh' innseadh e_

_Pl._ 1. _thogamaid_  _dh' innseamaid_  
2. _thogadh sibh_  _dh' innseadh sibh_  
3. _thogadh iad_  _dh' innseadh iad_

519. The changes on the terminations _ainn_, _eadh_, etc., stand merely by the orthographical rule.

520. The subjunctive is regularly aspirated (the result of a particle which is now lost) except after certain conjunctive particles (par. 494). Observe also the appearance of the aspirated particle _do_ before vowels which would seem to be merely for euphonic reasons as it has now no other signification, it disappears after the conjunctive particles.

521. Examples of the dependent form with the particles.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>An _ togainn_?</th>
<th><em>would I lift?</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nach _ togainn_?</td>
<td><em>would I not lift?</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na' _ togainn_,</td>
<td><em>if I would lift.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cha _ thogainn_,</td>
<td><em>I would not lift.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mur _ togainn_,</td>
<td><em>if I would not lift.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mur _ innsinn_,</td>
<td><em>if I would not tell.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cha' _ innsinn_,</td>
<td><em>I would not tell.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>An _ innsinn_?</td>
<td><em>would I tell?</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

_Thubhairt e gu'n togainn e_, _he said that I would lift it._
_Chunnaic mi an leabhar nach togainn_, _I saw the book which I would not lift._

522. We use the future relative with the conjunctive particle _ma_ where the fulfilment of a possible event is contemplated. We use the subjunctive with _na'n_ when the case supposed is to be regarded as remotely probable or almost impossible, and also where the contrary of an actual past event is supposed and the different result contemplated.

_Na'n saoilinn_; _chitheadh tu mi_, _If I thought so: you would see me._

**Subjunctive Tense—Passive Voice.**

523. The passive voice of the subjunctive is formed in _tadh_ (teadh) for all the persons of all verbs, with aspiration of an initial consonant, _do_ being prefixed in the case of
verbs beginning with a vowel or f, except after certain of
the particles. This do has no time signification, and is
only retained where euphony seems to require it.

bhualteadh mi,  I would be struck.
thogteadh mi,  I would be lifted.
dh' iarraidh e,  he would be asked.
dh' innsteadh dhuit,  you would be told.

524. After the particles in the dependent tense no as-
piration or dh' is used.
an togteadh e?  would he be lifted?
cha thogteadh mi,  I would not be lifted.
an iarraidh e?  would he be asked?
cha'n iarraidh sinn,  we would not be asked.

525. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Bhuailinn an dorus. 2. Bhuailteadh esan an dorus. 3. Bhuaile-
maid an dorus le clachan. 4. Bhualteadh an gille mor le maide.
5. Bhristinn an uinneag leis an ord. 6. Cha togainn an t-ord.
7. Dh'innsteadh e ae clachan. 8. Cha'n iarraidh e air an duine.
9. Dh'innsteadh dhuit air an t-sraid.
10. Cha'n iarraidh sinn.
11. Chunnaic mi an duine.
12. An leugadh an leabhair.
13. Cha'n leugadh an leabhair.
14. Cha'n fhagainn e air an lar.
15. Thubhairt e gu'n tigeadh e leabhar.
16. Nach ithteadh an t-aran air a' bhord?
17. Nach ithteadh an t-aran air a' bhord?
18. Cha'n ithteadh.
19. Dh'olaim an bainne ne'n fagadh i e.
21. Nach buailinn an dorus le clachan. 22. Na'm buailinn sa an
 Dorus am buailteadh thu e. 23. Thubhairt e gu'm buailinn an dorus
Leis na clachan sin. 24. Is e am fear nach buailteadh an gille.

526. Translate English into Gaelic:—
1. I would not throw that stone. 2. The one who would throw that
stone (he) would be very strong.
3. I would leave the stones there if they would not lift them.
4. The man who would not lift the book.
5. We would break the stones if you would let us.
6. If you threw a
stone you would break the window.
7. The window would not be
broken.
8. Would the sheep be on the hill this morning?
9. He would lift the stone and would throw it at the boy.
10. The boy
would be struck with the stone.
11. That man would strike the boy
with a stick.
12. He said that he would not strike the boy.
13. Would you strike the boy.
14. Yes.
LESSON XLIV.
THE IMPERATIVE.

527. The Imperative admits of only one tense form, and the only particle applicable is the negative, which in this case is na not cha.

ACTIVE VOICE.

528. In the imperative, the pronouns are amalgamated with the verb in the 1st and 2nd persons, both singular and plural, and only in the 3rd person are pronouns added.

529. All verbs are regular in the imperative. The 1st singular adds am (eam) to the root. The 2nd singular is the root of the verb, and requires no pronoun, though for emphasis, the emphatic pronoun thusa may be used. The 3rd singular is formed by adding adh (eadh) to the root and attaching the pronoun or noun. The 1st plural adds amaid (eamaid) to the root. The 2nd plural adds aibh (ibh) to the root. The 3rd plural is formed by adding adh (eadh) to the root and attaching the noun or pronoun.

Sg. 1. togam let me lift. cuiream, let me put.
3. togadh e, let him lift. cuireadh e, let him put.

Pl. 1. togaibh, lift ye. cuiribh, put ye.
2. togadh iad, let them lift. cuireadh iad, let them put.

530. These are negatived by na thus making an imperative prohibition in the 2nd person, na buail "don't strike." It does not cause aspiration.

PASSIVE VOICE.

531. The imperative passive of all verbs is formed by adding tar (tear) to the root of the verb. The pronouns are used in all persons, no amalgamation taking place.

togtar sinn, let us be lifted.
bualtear mi, let me be struck.

The terminations throughout vary according to the orthographical rule.

532. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:

533. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Strike the big window with a hammer.  2. Let us break the window with stones.  3. Strike the door with your stick.  4. Lift that stone and throw it at that dog.  5. Let that dog alone.  6. Don't strike it.  7. Let me put that stone in my pocket.  8. Let us go away now.  9. Put this stone on the table.  10. Don't put it there.  11. Do not forsake* me.  12. Forsake not the Gaelic.  13. Eat that bread but do not drink the milk.  14. Ask that man there.  15. Let us ask him for bread.  16. Lift that dog.  17. Don't lift that dog, it is not ours.  18. Let me tell (to) you a story.  19. Tell us a long story.  20. Put the bread away now.  21. Do not eat this bread.  22. Leave that bread on the table.  23. Build (tog) your house on a rock.

LESSON XLV.

The Participial Adjective.

534. Nearly all Gaelic verbs have a participial or verbal adjective, formed by adding *te* or *ta* to the root verb, as—briste "broken"; togte, "lifted"; this verbal adjective must not be confused with the verbal noun. When qualifying the noun it is a pure adjective. It is indeclinable for number or person, but suffers aspiration as any other adjective. Notice that some of these adjectival forms are exceptions to the orthographical rule (pars. 33-4-5).

bàta briste (brystchù), a broken boat.
chora fhéanné (y aunnchù), a skinned sheep.

Tha an sgin briste, the knife is broken.
Tha an sgin bhriste togte, the broken knife is lifted.

535. When the root verb ends in *t* only an *e* is added, when ending in *th*, the *h* is rejected and an *e* is added.

lot wound, loite wounded; bath drown, baite drowned.

* treig v. (treek) forsake.
536. A whole series of compound tenses of a passive form is formed from the combination of the verb *bi* in all its inflections and the verbal adjective.

Am bheil an dorus fosgailte?  
Bha an dorus duinte,  
Bitheam dearbh,  
Cha robh mi leonta an de,  
Tha mi sgithichte leotha,

*is the door open?*  
*the door was shut.*  
*let me be proved or tested.*  
*I was not wounded yesterday.*  
*I am done or worn out with them.*

537. Adjectival participles of past time are followed as in English by *le* "with" before the name of the instrument or agent.

Buailte le claidheamh (*bhpoodyltchu*),  
Leonta le Seumas (*llyontchu*),

*struck with a sword.*  
*wounded by James.*

538. The present infinitive is translated by aspirating the verbal noun and prefixing *a*, as:— *bh* (*bhit*), "to be"; *bhualadh" to strike"; and usually follows the noun instead of preceding it as in English, as:— *Thubhairt e rium an rop a tharruinn." He told me to pull the rope" (p. 147).

539. The infinitive of verbs commencing with a vowel take a *dh* before the verbal noun and verbs in *f* followed by a vowel take a *dh* before the verbal noun aspirated, as:— *ol" drink"; a dh' ol "to drink"; fag "leave"; a dh' fhagail "to leave" (par. 606).

540. **Vocabulary.**

**ceangailte** adj. (*kengyltchu*), tied.  
**fuasgailte** adh. (*fooasgyltchu*), liberated.

541. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. C'aite am bheil am bàta?  
2. Tha am bàta briste.  
3. Tha an t-aran ithte.  
4. Tha an uinneag briste.  
5. Bha an sgian briste.  
6. Tha an dorus mor fosgailte.  
7. Tha an uinneag druidte.  
8. Tha a chlach sin briste.  
9. Bha a' chlach mhor sin trom.  
10. Am bheil a' chlach dubh briste?  
11. Bha an dorus briste leis an ord.  
12. Bha sgian a' bhalach math a' tha i a nis briste.  
13. Bha an cu ceangailte ris a' bhord an ràoir.  
15. Bithidh an dorus fosgailte.  
16. B'ann duinte a bha an dorus.  
17. Am bheil an dorus fosgailte?  
18. Cuin' a bha an tigh togte?

542. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Is this boat broken?  
2. No, that is the broken boat.  
3. The window is broken.  
4. The big door was open last night.  
5. It will
not be open to-night. 6. Leave it shut now. 7. The window is shut. 8. Open the window and shut the door. 9. That man’s knife was good but it is broken now. 10. The knife will be left on the table to-night. 11. If it is lifted to-night it will not be left there again. 12. Is the big stone broken? 13. All the stones will be broken. 14. If the biggest stone is not broken yet it will be broken to-day. 15. It was lifted from the floor. 16. Will the big stone be good? 17. Will you be putting it on the table? 18. We will be breaking it on the floor. 19. Was the dog tied to the floor this morning? 20. He was tied to the chair this morning. 21. I will liberate him now. 22. He will be liberated at once.

### Paradigms of the Regular Verb.

We illustrate a complete paradigm of three regular verbs, exhibiting the initial forms and terminations of all the simple tenses at one view. The imperative and subjunctive have been given in full. In the other tenses, the pronoun only changes, the verb being the same for all persons, sing. and plural.

**Imp. Root.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imp. Root</th>
<th>tog</th>
<th>ol</th>
<th>fill</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>lift.</td>
<td>drink.</td>
<td>fold.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Past Tense (Preterite).

**Active indep.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Active indep.</td>
<td>thog mi</td>
<td>dh’ol mi</td>
<td>dh’fhill mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>do thog mi</td>
<td>d’ol mi</td>
<td>d’fhill mi</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Passive indep.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>thogadh mi</td>
<td>dh’oladh mi</td>
<td>dh’fhilladh mi</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>do thogadh mi</td>
<td>d’oladh mi</td>
<td>d’fhilladh mi</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Future Tense (Habitual Present).

**Independent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>togaidh mi</td>
<td>olaidh mi</td>
<td>fillidh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>*tog mi</td>
<td>*ol mi</td>
<td>*fill mi</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Relative.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>thogas</td>
<td>dh’olas</td>
<td>dh’fhillleas</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rel.</td>
<td>*togar mi</td>
<td>*olar mi</td>
<td>*filllear mi</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Subjunctive Tense (Active Voice).

**Independent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>*Indep.</td>
<td>thogainn</td>
<td>dh’olainn</td>
<td>dh’fhillinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>2 thogadh thu</td>
<td>dh’oladh thu</td>
<td>dh’fhilladh thu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 thogadh e</td>
<td>dh’oladh e</td>
<td>dh’fhilladh e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl.</td>
<td>1 thogamaid</td>
<td>dh’olamaid</td>
<td>dh’fhillamaid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 thogadh sibh</td>
<td>dh’oladh sibh</td>
<td>dh’fhilladh sibh</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 thogadh iad</td>
<td>dh’oladh iad</td>
<td>dh’fhilladh iad</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>sg. 1 *togaiinn</td>
<td>*olainn</td>
<td>*fhillinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(etc.)</td>
<td>(etc.)</td>
<td>(etc.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Subjunctive Tense (Passive Voice).

**Independent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>thogtadh mi</td>
<td>dh’oltadh mi</td>
<td>dh’fhillteadh mi</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>*togadh mi</td>
<td>*oltadh mi</td>
<td>*fhillteadh mi</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For notes see following page.
Imperative Mood.

Active
1 sing. togam olam (awlám) filleam
2 tog ol fill
3 togadh e oladh e filleadh e
1 pl. togamaid olamaid filleadh maid
2 togail olaibh fillibh
3 togadh iad oladh iad filleadh iad
Passive,
togtar mi oltar mi filltear mi
Infinitive pres. a thogail a dh'ol a dh'fhilleadh
fut. ri togail ri ol ri filleadh
Participle pres. a' togail ag ol a' filleadh
past air togail air ol air filleadh
Participial adj. togte olte fillte.

*These dependent forms are used with all the particles, as shown in par. 494. Cha' aspirates all these dependent forms where the initial of the verb is g, c, m, p, and b (excepting bu); cha'n aspirates initial f + vowel verbs (see cha, par. 494).

†These independent forms are also used after the conditional affirmative particles:—ma and ged a

ma thog mi if I lift. ma thogadh mi, if I was lifted.

LESSON XLVI.

544. Conversational Exercise:—Questions and Answers.

There is in Gaelic no affirmative word corresponding to the English "yes," or negative "no." A question is put by the interrogative form of the verb and the answer must be made by the affirmative or negative form of the verb correspondent in tense to the form used in putting the question.

ciod e ? (kut ä)
is sgian i (iss skeun y)
co leis i ? (ko lásh y)
cha'n eil fios agam (chan yálf fyss akum)
nach leat-sa i ? (nach let'sha y)
c'aite am bheil i ? (ka-chúm vål y)
tha i 'nam sporan (ha y nam sporan)
an gabh thu so ? (ung gav oo sho)
cha ghabh (cha ghav)
thoir ort (hoir orst)
an d'hag e i ? (un dák á y)
dh'fhag (ghák)
an do thog thu e ? (un do hok oo á)

what is it?
it is a knife.
who is it?
I do not know.
Is it not yours?
where is it?
it is in my purse.
will you take this?
No—I will not.
away with you.
did he leave her?
yes—he did.
did you lift him?
545. In English, as an answer to a question in which the verb is fully expressed, the mere sign of the tense suffices, the rest being understood from the question put, as:—

"did you go to town to-day?" answer "I did." To the reply "I did," the verb "go" is understood. In Gaelic, no such suppression as this can occur, we must enunciate the whole verb as in the examples shown in this exercise.

thog
cha do thog
an leig sinn as e?
leigidh. cha leig
an do phos e?
cha do phos
am pos thu mi?
posaidh
cha phos
an leat so?
is leam, 's leam
an tusa a th'ann?
's mi. cha mhi
co tha so?
tha mise
am bheil thu sgith?
tha mi gle sgith
an ol thu so?
olaidh, cha'n ol
an d'ol thu e?
dh' ol. cha d' ol
cia meud uair tha e?
theth uair?
de'n uair a tha e?
leth-uair an deidh uair
cia an uair?
mu dha uair
eadar a h-aon agus a
 dha
an uair mu dheireadh
a' cheud uair
aon uair
uair sam bith
uair a rinn mi sin
b'iidh mi faibh
tha mi a' dol
dachaidh
greas ort, ma ta
slan leat
an la chi's nach thaic

(hok)
(chat tdo hok)
(ún-leik-shynn ass ă)
(lláhy, cha-llákh)
(un do fos ā)
(cha do fos)
(um pos oo mee)
(poss-y)
(cha foss)
(un láht shoh)
(iss lyám, slyám)
(ún toosū ū hānn)
(sme, chav-vee)
(śo ha sho)
(ha mish-ū)
(um vāl oo skee)
(ha mee klā skee)
(űn awóll oo sho)
(awly chan-awll)
(un dawll oo ā)
(ghawll, chat-awll)
(ky mátt ooūr ū hā ā)
(ha ā dīd ooūr)
(tchánn aoūr ū hā ā)
(lyă ooūr ūn tchā ooūr)
(kă ūn ooūr)
(mū ghā ooūr)
(ātūr ū hón āghus ū
ghā)
(ūn ooūr mū yărück)
(ū chyūtt ooūr)
(ōn ooūr)
(oowūr sūm by)
(oowūr ū rynn my shyn)
(by my fallūv)
(ha mee ū dawll tachy)

yes—I did.
no—I did not.
shall we let him go?
yes. no.
did he marry?
no—he did not.
will you marry me?
yes—I will.
no—I will not.
is this yours?
yes—it is.
is this you?
yes—no.
who is here?
I am—it is I.
are you tired?
I am very tired.
will you drink this?
yes—no, I will not
drink.
did you drink it?
yes—no.
what time is it?
it is two o'clock.
what o'clock is it?
half-past one.
what hour ?="when? 
about two o'clock.
between one and two
the last time.
the first time.
one o'clock, once.
any time.
once I did that.
I will be going.
I am going home.
haste you, then.
farewell.
the day I see you and
the day I don't.
### IRREGULAR VERBS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb Root</th>
<th>beir</th>
<th>cluinn</th>
<th>dean</th>
<th>rach</th>
<th>ruig</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>bear</td>
<td>hear</td>
<td>do</td>
<td>go</td>
<td>reach, arrive</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Active Ind.  
- Rug mi (rook)
- Chuala mi (chooulit)  
  - Cuala mi  
  - Chualadh mi  
  - Cualas (rel)
- Cluinneadh mi

**Past Tense.**
- Chaidh mi (chây)
  - Cuidheas
  - Dreachadh mi  
  - Deachas
- Teid mi (ichâch)

**Future Tense (Habituall Present).**
- Chuinneadh mi  
  - Cluinneas
  - Cluinntear
  - Teideal

**Subjunctive (Active Voice).**
- Chuininn
  - Cluinneamaid
  - Cluinneadh thu
  - Teideal

**Subjunctive (Passive Voice).**
- Chuinnteadh mi
  - Cluinnteadh mi
  - Rachtaddh

**Imperative.**
- Beiream
- Cluinn
- Cluinn
- Cluinn
- Cluinn
- Cluinn
- A chluinneadh
- A" cluinnntinn
- Air cluinnntinn
- Deante
- A dhol (m)
  - Ri dol
  - Air dol
  - Air ruigissinn
  - Ruige
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb Root</th>
<th>thoir, tabhair</th>
<th>thig</th>
<th>abair</th>
<th>faic</th>
<th>faigh</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Translation</strong></td>
<td>give.</td>
<td>come.</td>
<td>say.</td>
<td>see.</td>
<td>get, find.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PAST TENSE.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Active Ind.</td>
<td>thug mi (hook)</td>
<td>thainig mi</td>
<td>thubhairt mi</td>
<td>chunnaic mi</td>
<td>fhuair mi (hoo-ur)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>*d’thainig mi</td>
<td>d’thainig mi</td>
<td>d’thubhairt mi</td>
<td>*faca mi</td>
<td>d’fhuair mi(dhoor)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passive Ind.</td>
<td>thugadh mi</td>
<td>f’thainneas</td>
<td>f’thubhairteadh</td>
<td>chunnacas</td>
<td>fhuaradh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>d’thugadh mi</td>
<td>f’thainneas</td>
<td>f’d’thubhairteadh</td>
<td>*facas</td>
<td>d’fhuaradh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>FUTURE TENSE (Habitual Present).</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Active Ind.</td>
<td>bheir mi (vär)</td>
<td>thig mi (heek)</td>
<td>their mi här</td>
<td>chi mi (chee)</td>
<td>gheibh mi (yöv)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>toir mi (ttor)</td>
<td>tig mi (tcheek)</td>
<td>abair mi (apur)</td>
<td>*faic mi (fächk)</td>
<td>gheibh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative</td>
<td>bheir mi</td>
<td>thig mi</td>
<td>their mi</td>
<td>chi mi</td>
<td>gheibheare mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passive Ind.</td>
<td>bheirear mi</td>
<td>f’thigear</td>
<td>f’theirear</td>
<td>chithear mi</td>
<td>*faigheare mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.</td>
<td>toirear mi</td>
<td>f’tigear</td>
<td>f’tairear</td>
<td>*faictear mi</td>
<td>*faigheare mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SUBJUNCTIVE (Active Voice).</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ind. 1 sing.</td>
<td>bheirinn</td>
<td>thiginn (tchynn)</td>
<td>theirinn</td>
<td>chithinn</td>
<td>gheibhinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 plur.</td>
<td>bheireamaid</td>
<td>thigeamaid</td>
<td>theireamaid</td>
<td>chitheamaid</td>
<td>gheibheamaid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2, 3 s. &amp; p.</td>
<td>bheireadh thu</td>
<td>thigeadh thu</td>
<td>theireadh thu</td>
<td>chitheadh thu</td>
<td>gheibheadh thu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep. 1 sing.</td>
<td>toirinn</td>
<td>tiginn</td>
<td>abairinn</td>
<td>*faicinn</td>
<td>*faighinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2, 3 s. &amp; p.</td>
<td>tugadh thu</td>
<td>tigeadh thu</td>
<td>abaireadh thu</td>
<td>*faiceadh thu</td>
<td>*faighinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SUBJUNCTIVE (Passive Voice).</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>bheireadh mi</td>
<td>f’thigeadh</td>
<td>f’theareadh</td>
<td>chitheadh mi</td>
<td>gheibheadh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dependent</td>
<td>tugadh mi</td>
<td>f’tigeadh</td>
<td>f’taireadh</td>
<td>*faicteadh mi</td>
<td>*faigheadadh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>IMPERATIVE.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Active 1 sg.</td>
<td>thoiream</td>
<td>thigem</td>
<td>abaiream</td>
<td>faiceam</td>
<td>faigheam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>thoir or tabhair</td>
<td>thig</td>
<td>abair</td>
<td>faic</td>
<td>faigh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>thoireadh e</td>
<td>thigeadh e</td>
<td>abaireadh e</td>
<td>faiceadh e</td>
<td>faiheadh e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 pl.</td>
<td>thoireamaid</td>
<td>thigeamaid</td>
<td>abaireamaid</td>
<td>faiceamaid</td>
<td>faiheadh maid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>thoireadh</td>
<td>thigibh</td>
<td>abairibh, abraibh</td>
<td>faicibh</td>
<td>faigheibh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>thoireadh iad</td>
<td>thigeadh iad</td>
<td>abaireadh iad</td>
<td>faiceadh iad</td>
<td>faigheadh iad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passive</td>
<td>thoirear mi</td>
<td>f’tigear</td>
<td>f’tairear, abrar</td>
<td>faictear mi</td>
<td>faigheadh mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Infin. pres.</td>
<td>a thoirt (f)</td>
<td>a thiginn (m)</td>
<td>a radh (m)</td>
<td>a dh’thaicinn</td>
<td>a fhaighinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>future</td>
<td>ri toirt</td>
<td>ri tighinn</td>
<td>ri radh</td>
<td>ri faicinn</td>
<td>ri faigheinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partic. pres.</td>
<td>a’ toirt</td>
<td>a’ tighinn</td>
<td>ag radh</td>
<td>a’ faicinn</td>
<td>a’ faigheinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>past</td>
<td>air toirt</td>
<td>air tighinn</td>
<td>air radh</td>
<td>air faicinn</td>
<td>air faighinn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partic. adj.</td>
<td>tugte</td>
<td></td>
<td>raite</td>
<td>faicte</td>
<td>faigte</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
LESSON XLVII.
THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

546. In Gaelic grammar there are ten verbs classed as irregular because they do not conform to the one uniform type of conjugation now known. To these in consistency must be added the substantive verb bi.† From a closer study it will be found that these verbs are rather defective than irregular. They are perfectly regular in their numbers and persons. Their irregularity consists only in this, that they want certain tenses which they borrow from certain other verbs which are in themselves quite regular.

547. Irregular verbs are always very troublesome to the learner, but we have only ten in Gaelic. There are over two hundred irregular verbs in English, and nearly four hundred in French.

The preceding table illustrates these ten irregular Gaelic verbs in all their simple tenses.

‡ Synopsis of the irregular verb bi be (thou).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Independent.</th>
<th>Dependent.</th>
<th>Impersonal forms.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present, tha</td>
<td>bheil, eil</td>
<td>thatar, bheilear, eilear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past, bha</td>
<td>robh</td>
<td>bhatar, robhtar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Future, bithidh</td>
<td>*bi</td>
<td>bitear, *bitear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rel. Future, bhithneas (bhios)</td>
<td></td>
<td>bhithneas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sunjunctive, bithinn (par. 79)</td>
<td>*bithinn</td>
<td>bhiteadh, *biteadh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Infinitive, bith being</td>
<td>a bhi, bhith to be</td>
<td>air bhi have been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Also the various forms of the assertive verb is and its past tense bu. These are also used with the tenses of the verb bi to express existence emphatically. Is mi a tha "It is I who am"—"I am indeed"; cha mhi a bha ann "it is not I who was in it, there—I was not there."

NOTES ON IRREGULAR VERBS, pages 138, 139.

The dependent forms are used after the particles (par. 494).

† These being intransitive verbs have no passive, the forms shown are impersonal or relative.

These independent forms are also used after the conditional affirmative particles ma and ged a.

ma chuala mi, if I heard. ma chualas mi, if I was heard.

* These forms are used with the particles as shown in par. 494. They are aspirated by the negative particle cha. Verbs in l, n, r, d, t s, resist aspiration.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>cha do rinn mi</th>
<th>cha do chuala mi,</th>
<th>cha chluinnear mi,</th>
<th>cha chluinn mi,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I did not do.</td>
<td>I did not hear.</td>
<td>I shall not be heard.</td>
<td>I will not hear.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Notes on Verbs.

548. A verb is said to be impersonal when it is used in its third person singular passive without a nominative expressed to indicate that an object is undergoing some operation. A progressive passive tense is thus formed which is similar to the Latin, but which has no analogy to the passive in English, French, etc. A series of tenses is formed from the impersonal forms of the verb bi; with the pronoun le; used as a future passive.

Thatar a' cur an t-sil, the seed is being sown.
Bhatar a' togal an tighé, the house was being built.
Thathas a' togal an tighé, they are building the house.

Let the stack be built.

When an object is undergoing some operation.

Bithear a' togal na cruacha, it is said, people are saying.
Thatar ag radh, it is not said.
Cha'n eilear ag radh,(methinks) I hear the sound of

The house was being built.

English, French, etc.

Cluinnear leam na gaoithe, it shall be struck by me.

The verbs assume different meanings according to the pronoun used.

{one) sees, might see.

Buailear leam, (methinks) I hear the sound of

Leig as mo lamh, let go my hand.
Ghabh e air a bhí gu tinn, he pretended to be sick.
Ghabh iad air ; orm, they beat (punished) him ; me
Gabhair a' chu, strike the dog.
Gabh ris, acknowledge, confess.
Gabh a null ; a nuas, go over ; come down.
Eisd ris an duine, listen to the man.
Abair ri Tomas bualadh, tell Thomas to strike.
Cuir an clo, put in type, print.
Cuir an aghaidh, put against, oppose.

Beiridh mi orra am maireach, I will reach for the hammer.
Rug a' bho, the cow calved.

The irregular verb beir means "bear" or "bring forth"—rug i mac "she bore a son"; rug a' bho "the cow calved." But with the preposition air it conveys the further meanings of "catching," "overtaking," etc.

Rug mi air Domhnall, I caught Donald.
Beir air Iain; beir orm, catch John, catch me.
Rug mi air an each, I caught the horse.
Chaeir air an air an nochd, I will not catch him to-night.
Beiridh mi orra am maireach, I will catch them to-morrow.
Ruigidh mi air an ord, I will reach for the hammer.
An ruig thu air a' chraobh ? can you reach the tree?
551. **Thoir or tabhair** means “give*, take, bring,” etc., dependent on the preposition used. Note the following:—

| Thoir a nall,                      | reach or fetch here.          |
| Thoir air falbh ; thairis,          | take away ; give over.         |
| Thug e aran do Sheumas,             | he gave bread to James.        |
| Thug e a steach an cu,              | he brought in the dog.         |
| Thug e am peann leis,               | he took the pen with him.      |
| Thug e sgillinn air paipéir,        | he gave a penny for a paper.   |
| Thug e air Mairi suidhe,            | he made Mary sit.              |
| Thug sibh uam-sa mo chlann          | you have taken from me my children. |

Thug mi air, I compelled him.

552. **Read in Gaelic and translate into English:**—


553. **Translate English into Gaelic:**—

1. He did not get it yesterday, but he got it to-day. 2. What will he get to-morrow? 3. The boat has been found. 4. I went home.

---

* According to the English dictionary the verb “give” in English has over 100 different meanings, primary, secondary, and from the aid of prepositions.
and saw my father. 5. When I go home I will see the land I was born in. 6. Let it be done now. 7. He did not do it, but if you asked him he would do it. 8. He will not go away yet. 9. Did he not go home yesterday? 10. No, but he will go home to-morrow. 11. Give me that and I will give you this. 12. Where did you find it? 13. If you will catch him I will give you a shilling. 14. I would not catch a black cat for any money. 15. The white cow calved yesterday. 16. I heard you in the house last night. 17. Will you see the farmer to-day? 18. If I do not, I will see him to-morrow. 19. If I should see him to-night I will get milk from him. 20. Let me see, it is a very dark night and he will not come. 21. When will he come to the town? 22. He will go to the town to-morrow. 23. Leave that and do this. 24. When did she arrive home last night? 25. That man came to our house to-day and he will come again to-morrow. 26. He did not go fishing yesterday. 27. This is the man who made the boat. 28. Let us go and see it. 29. You will get a book at our house if you will go. 30. Will I get it? 31. Give me that book. 32. A noise was heard here last night. 33. Where were you born? 34. I was born in Glasgow, but I have Gaelic. 35. Did he do that? 36. Will he do it for me? 37. Yes.

LESSON XLVIII.

The Verbal Noun.

554. The verbal noun in Gaelic corresponds to the infinitive, participle and gerund in English grammar. In Gaelic it is in all respects a noun denoting action or energy of the verb. Verbal nouns are used in conjunction with the verb bi to form the present tense of Gaelic verbs which is thus a compound present tense. Other compound tenses are also formed. They are generally preceded by a preposition which marks the time of the action, thus bualadh "striking"; a' bualadh "a-striking," literally "at striking"—(a' ag, aig "at"); air bualadh "after striking."

tha mi a' bualadh, I am at striking; I am striking, or I strike.

555. By adding a terminal adh, ail, etc. (which corresponds to "ing" etc. in English) to the root of a Gaelic verb a word partaking of the quality of noun and verb will be formed. Thus by adding adh to trus "gather" we have trusadh, which as a noun signifies "a gathering"; and again when preceded by the preposition aig (ag) acquires the verbal signification of "gathering." These are pro-
properly termed participles, participating as they do in the qualities of more than one part of speech.

556. Verbal nouns are always nouns. They may be governed by prepositions qualified by adjectives, used (many of them) in the plural number, followed by a genitive case, and so on. They can never govern an accusative or objective case as verbs can. They are generally of the masculine gender and are declined through the cases as other nouns.

| N. | trusadh (m) a gathering. | trusaidheam gatherings. |
| G. | trusadh of a gathering. | trusadh of gatherings. |
| D. | (air) trusadh (on) a gathering | (air) trusaidhean (on) gatherings |
| V. | A trusaidh O gathering. | O thrusadha O gatherings. |

FORMATION OF THE VERBAL NOUN.

557. In English there is no rule for the formation of a noun of action. It may be identical with the simple root, or it may be formed by adding one of a variety of endings: "restraint," "prohibition," "growth," "departure," "gathering," etc.

558. So in Gaelic there is no rule for the formation of a verbal noun. It may be identical with the root verb, or it may add one of a variety of endings, as:—adh, eadh, amh, ail, inn; some contract while others again are totally different.

559. The general rule is to add adh (eadh) to the root verb.

| breab (bpráp) kick. | breabadh (bprá-p-úgh) kicking. |
| brist (bpryshtch) break. | bristeddh (bprysk-tchugh) breaking. |
| taom (ittöm) pour. | taomadh (ittöm úgh) pouring. |

560. A number add adh to a contracted root.

| buail (booal) strike. | bualadh (boodal-úgh) striking. |
| duisg (dooshk) awake. | dusgadh (dooskúgh) awakening. |
| fosgail (foskül) open. | fosgladh (fosklúgh) opening. |
| innis (ynnysh) tell. | innseadh (yunnshúgh) telling. |

561. A number use the root as the verbal noun.

| fas (fás) grow, growing. | ol (awl) drink, drinking. |
| falbh (fallúv) go, going. | ruith (rooyh) run, running. |
| snamh (snaw) swim, swimming. | seinn (sháynn) sing, singing. |

562. A number leave out the last small vowel and substitute a broad.
563. Many verbs ending in air add a t.

labhair (llavür) speak.  labháirt (llavúrtch) speaking.
tachair (ttachur) meet.  tachairt (ttachurtch) meeting.
freagair (frdkuv) answer.  freagairt (jrdkurtch) answering.

564. Many monosyllable verbs add sinn.

creid (krätch) believe.  creidsinn (crätchynn) believing.
ruig (rooyk) reach.  ruigsinn (rooykshynn) reaching.
treig (trýk) forsake.  treigsinn (ttrdkshynn) forsaking.

565. A number of monosyllables add tinn, which becomes tuinn when the root verb is broad.

cinn (kynn) grow.  cinntinn (kyntchyn) growing.
cluinn (klooynn) hear.  cluinnntinn (clooyntchynn) hearing.
seall (shaool) see, look.  sealltuinn (shauUyn) looking.

566. A number add ail or eil to the root verb.

gabh (gav) take.  gabhail (gavúl) taking.
tog (iok) lift, build.  togail (ioküül) lifting.
fag (fåk) leave.  fagail (fåküül) leaving.
tilg (cheeleek) throw.  tilgeil (cheeleeküül) throwing.

567. A few verbs form their verbal nouns irregularly.

marcaich (markách) ride.  marcachd (marcachk) riding.
thig (heek) come.  tighinn (tch yynn) coming.
seas (shás) stand.  seasamh (shasšiw) standing.
gluais (glooašh) move.  glusad (glo as iäd) moving.
farr (eeüir) ask.  iarraidh (eear-y) asking.
suidh (sso-y) sit.  suidhe (sso-y ü) sitting.
tuit (tootch) fall.  tuiteam (tooh tchüm) falling.

568. In vocabularies and dictionaries, the verbal noun, when not regularly formed, is usually given as well as the root verb.

**Government of the Participle.**

569. A transitive participle takes its noun object in the genitive case, after the participle.

Bha an gille ag itheadh arain,  *the lad was eating bread.*

**Arain** is the genitive case of **aran**, after **ag itheadh**. Literally the sentence is: The lad was at the eating of bread.

Tha an t-each a’ breabadh an doruis,  *the horse is kicking the door.*
570. A transitive participle takes its noun object in the accusative case when that object is qualified by another noun in the genitive.

Tha an t-each air bristeadh cas a’ bhalach, the horse has broken the boy’s foot.

571. When the object of a transitive participle is a personal pronoun, we use in Gaelic the possessive pronoun and a preposition in a combined form. Such a combination is called a prepositional possessive pronoun (par. 423). In such positions the participle becomes a pure substantive noun, hence the name, verbal noun.

Tha e ‘gam bhualadh, he is striking me (at my striking).
Cha bhi mi ‘ga dugsadh, I will not waken her (at her awakening)

572. When the intransitive participles “sitting,” “standing,” “sleeping,” etc., convey the idea of state as they generally do they are rendered by the verbal noun preceded by the verb bi in any of its forms and the prepositional possessive pronouns formed from ann “in” (pars. 420-3, 430).

Tha e ‘na shuidhe, he is sitting.
Bithidh e ‘na chadal, he will be sleeping.
Bithidh i ‘na cadal, she will be sleeping.

573. When another verb than bi is used the infinitive takes the place of the participle, but in such cases state is not conveyed.

Chaidh e a chadal, he went to sleep.
Thainig e a laigh, he came to lie down.

574. An absolute clause or the beginning of a narrative is often expressed in Gaelic by the participle preceded by the prepositions air, an deidh, etc., with the preposition do “to” immediately following and preceding the noun, which it places in the dative case; preceding a pronoun the preposition do becomes compounded with the pronoun. These may be rendered in English by “when,” “after,” “on,” or by the past participle preceded by “having.”

Air do’n luing seoladh, when the ship sailed, or
the ship having sailed.
Air do’n t-samhradh tighinn, when summer comes
after summer comes.
on summer coming.
summer having come.
Air dhomh tighinn air m’ais, on my coming back.
after I come back.
Government of the Infinitive.

575. One verb governs another in the infinitive.
Tha sinn a’ dol a bhualadh, we are going to strike.

576. The object of a transitive infinitive expressing purpose stands after the infinitive in the genitive case.
Thainig mi a bhualadh an doruis, I came to strike the door.
Chaidh mi a dh’ ol an uisge, I went to drink the water.

577. If the object be a pronoun, the possessive pronoun or an emphatic personal takes its place. We use the preposition gu.
Tha e a’ dol g’ur bualadh, he is going to strike you.
Thog e lamh g’ a bhualadh, he raised a hand to strike him.
Feumaidh lain mise ’phaidheadh, John must pay me.

578. When the object to a transitive verb does not denote purpose it stands before the infinitive in the accusative case. All those compound expressions which do duty for verbs come under this rule as the infinitive and its noun are really the subject of these sentences, the predicate being the noun or adjective which immediately follows is.
Is toigh leam an leabhar a leughadh* I wish or desire to read the book.
Dh’iarr e orm an doruis a dhunadh, he asked me to shut the door.
* cf. Is toigh leam leughadh an leabhair, The reading of the book (by another) is a pleasure to me.

579. In a few instances, principally intransitives, the infinitive sign is not required and no aspiration takes place.
Feumaidh mi suidhe, I must sit.
Cha’n fhéum thu seasamh, you must not stand.

580. Those verbs which require a preposition after them to complete their sense take their object after the infinitive. The object is governed in the dative case by the preposition. A pronoun object becomes a prepositional pronoun.
Chaidh mi a bhréith air an each, I went to catch the horse.
Cha deachaidh mi a bhréith air, I did not go to catch him.
Theid mi a bhréith orra, I will go to catch them.

581. ri, signifying “to,” has the effect of changing the sense to that of future passive (par. 607).
Tha an leabhar ri fhaicinn, the book is to be seen.
Tha iad ri tighinn, they are to come.
582. In English a noun of action can usually be substituted for the infinitive, and in translating it with the possessive pronoun it is better to do so. Consider the effect of "my to come" with "my coming."

Is fhéarr suidhe goirid na seasamh fada,

It is better to sit short than to stand long.
better short sitting than long-standing.

Bonnach a mhealladh na cloinne,

A bannock for deceiving of (not to deceive) the children.

Thainig orm falbh,

(If it came on me to go) I was obliged going.

Bha mi am shuidhe,

(I was in my to sit) I was (in my) sitting.

583. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


584. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. The little girl will be opening the door. 2. What is he doing now? 3. He is fishing in the stream. 4. What is that man doing? 5. He is going to strike the boy. 6. What is that other man doing? 7. He is coming to kick the dog. 8. I will lift my left hand to strike him. 9. He is breaking my stick. 10. He was eating bread this morning. 11. He will be going home now. 12. Will the boy be running away? 13. The men were sitting at the door. 14. What were you saying? 15. The little boy was gathering stones. 16. What were you asking? 17. Will your father be going fishing this evening? 18. The boy is breaking stones with a hammer. 19. He will be striking us with the stones. 20. We were breaking them. 21. James is putting bread on the table. 22. They were running home. 23. What are you building? 24. I am building a small house. 25. John is striking the door. 26. He came to see my sister last night. 27. I will be striking him. 28. He has not been drinking water. 29. Who says that?
LESSON XLIX.

SYNOPSIS OF A GAELIC VERB.

585. When the verb is alike in the three persons of both numbers as is the case in most of the tenses, it will be enough to show the 1st person singular only, as a sufficient guide to all the other persons. The remaining persons can be formed by changing the pronoun. The following shows the independent form. By the aid of the prepositions a', ag, and air, we have nearly as complete a set of tenses as can be formed in English.

**Indicative Active.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Active Form</th>
<th>Passive Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pres. Progres.</td>
<td>Tha mi a' bualadh</td>
<td>I am striking (at striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Tha mi air bualadh,</td>
<td>I have struck (after striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect</td>
<td>Tha mi air bhi a' (contin.) bualadh,</td>
<td>I have been striking (I am after being striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fut. Indef.</td>
<td>Buailidh mi,</td>
<td>I shall strike.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Progress.</td>
<td>Bithidh mi a' bualadh,</td>
<td>I shall be striking.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Bithidh mi air bualadh,</td>
<td>I shall have struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect</td>
<td>Bithidh mi air bhi a' (contin.) bualadh,</td>
<td>I shall have been striking (after being striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past Indef.</td>
<td>Bha mi a' bualadh,</td>
<td>I was striking (a-striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Bha mi air bualadh,</td>
<td>I had struck (after striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ „ (cont.)</td>
<td>Bha mi air bhi a' bualadh,</td>
<td>I had been striking.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Indicative Passive.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Active Form</th>
<th>Passive Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pres. Defin.,</td>
<td>Tha mi buailte,</td>
<td>I am struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Progress.</td>
<td>Tha mi 'gam bhualadh,</td>
<td>I am being struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Tha mi air mo bhualadh</td>
<td>I have been struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fut. Indef.,</td>
<td>Bithidh mi buailte,</td>
<td>I shall be struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Bithidh mi air mo buailte</td>
<td>I shall be struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ „ (cont.)</td>
<td>Bithidh mi air mo buailte</td>
<td>I will have been struck. (I will be after my striking).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past Indef.,</td>
<td>Bhuailleadh mi,</td>
<td>I was struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Progres.,</td>
<td>Bha mi 'gam bhualadh,</td>
<td>I was struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Perfect,</td>
<td>Bha mi air mo bhualadh</td>
<td>I had been struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subjun. Active</td>
<td>Bhithinn a' bualadh,</td>
<td>I would be striking.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Bhuailinn,</td>
<td>Bhithinn air bualadh,</td>
<td>I would strike.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Subjun. Passive</td>
<td>Bhithinn 'gam bhualadh</td>
<td>I would be struck.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Bhuailteadh mi,</td>
<td>Bhithinn buailte,</td>
<td>I would be strick.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>„ Bhuailteadh mi,</td>
<td>Bhithinn air mo buailadh,</td>
<td>I would have been strick.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Exercise—Write a similar synopsis of the verbs, ol and fag.
LESSON L.
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

586. There are a number of verbs which are deficient or defective, being used in one tense or part of a tense only. The following are the more commonly used forms of these verbs.

arsa, ars', orsa, ors', said, quoth.

Used in the past tense only:
Arsa mise, said I.
Ars' esan, said he.

theab (hāhp) had almost, had nearly, was like.

Used in the past tense only, affirmative, negative, etc.:
Theab mi tuiteam, I nearly fell.
An do theab e tuiteam, did he almost fall.
Ged nach do theab mi tuiteam, though I was not like falling.
feuch (fāch) behold, see; feuchaibh behold ye.

These are the only forms. feuch "to show" is not defective.

tiugainn (tchookynn); tiugainnih; come away.

Used in these persons of the imperative only:
Eirich agus tiugainn O! rise and let us come away!
Tiugainnih, come along.

trothad (trho-ūt); trothadaibh; come here; come hither.
is (iss) is, are, etc.; bu was, were, etc.

The assertive form of the verb bi; used in the present and past tenses only (see Lesson XVII.).

AUXILIARY VERBS.

587. The idea of possibility, permission, duty, necessity, as conveyed by the English verbs "may," "might," "must," "ought," etc.

We have in Gaelic two regular verbs faod (fōd) and feum (fām) which are used with the verbal nouns of other verbs and have the same force as English "may" and "must," etc.

faodaidh mi (fōd-y) I may.
feumaidh mi (fām-y) I must.
dh'haodainn (ghōdynn) I might.
dh'heumainn (yāmynn) I would need.

dh'haod mi (yōd) I might have.
dh'heum (yām) I would need have.
an d'haod mi? (dōdt) might I?
an d'heum mi? (dyām) had I to?
cha d'haod mi, I might not have.
chas d'heum mi, I must not.
am faod mi? may I?
am feum mi? must I?
Further examples with the infinitive:—

Faodaidh mi falbh am maireach,  
Am faod mi falbh?  
Ma dh’fhaodas mi falbh (yōdjūs),  
Dh’fhaod mi falbh,  
Na’n d’fhaod mi falbh,  
Ma dh’fheumas e falbh (yāmūs),  
Faodar a bualadh (fodūr),  
Feumaidh tu a bualadh,  
Faodaidh e a’ chlach a bhualadh,  

*I may go to-morrow.*  
*May I go?*  
*If I may go.*  
*I might have gone.*  
*If I might have gone.*  
*She may be struck.*  
*She must be struck.*  
*You must strike her.*  
*He may strike the stone.*

**COMPOSITE PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.**

588. There is a very important class of idioms in connection with the verbs *is* and *bu* and the preposition *le* “with.” These idioms relate to the action of the will, intellect, the memory, the fancy, and at times the passions.

English verbs such as “I choose”; “I desire”; “I disregard”; “I pity”; “I am fond”; “I prefer”; “I love”; “I remember”; “I wonder”; “I am surprised.” It seems “right,” “wrong,” “poor,” “just,” “bad,” “painful,” and many others of kindred meaning are thus rendered into Gaelic.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Gaelic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miann leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mee-un</em> (I wish, or desire)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is toigh leam</em></td>
<td><em>Toi</em> (I love)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is eol leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I know)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is coma leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I don’t care for)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is cuimhne leam</em></td>
<td><em>Kooy ni</em> (I remember)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is fearr leam</em></td>
<td><em>Jyarr</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is deise leam</em></td>
<td><em>Ichasku</em> (I think it is pretty or it seems easier to me)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is annsa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Aunnsu</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miosa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Meesu</em> (I pity)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is maith leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mah</em> (I like)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miann leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mee-un</em> (I wish, or desire)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is toigh leam</em></td>
<td><em>Toi</em> (I love)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is eol leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I know)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is coma leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I don’t care for)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is cuimhne leam</em></td>
<td><em>Kooy ni</em> (I remember)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is fearr leam</em></td>
<td><em>Jyarr</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is deise leam</em></td>
<td><em>Ichasku</em> (I think it is pretty or it seems easier to me)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is annsa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Aunnsu</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miosa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Meesu</em> (I pity)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is maith leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mah</em> (I like)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miann leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mee-un</em> (I wish, or desire)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is toigh leam</em></td>
<td><em>Toi</em> (I love)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is eol leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I know)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is coma leam</em></td>
<td><em>Yol</em> (I don’t care for)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is cuimhne leam</em></td>
<td><em>Kooy ni</em> (I remember)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is fearr leam</em></td>
<td><em>Jyarr</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is deise leam</em></td>
<td><em>Ichasku</em> (I think it is pretty or it seems easier to me)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is annsa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Aunnsu</em> (I prefer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is miosa leam</em></td>
<td><em>Meesu</em> (I pity)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Is maith leam</em></td>
<td><em>Mah</em> (I like)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

An object to these verbs is placed next after the pronoun;  
*Is toigh leam Mairi* “I love Mary—I am fond of Mary.”  
They are also used with all the verbal particles (494)  
*Ma’s toigh leam Mairi* “If I do love Mary,” etc.

589. Here is an example of this last idiom in a very simple sentence.  
*Is maith dhomh e ach cha mhaith leam e* (lit.),  
“*It is good for me but it is not good with me.*”  
Here the first clause may be translated literally, but the second is
idiomatic and signifies “I do not like it” (though, perhaps, it is good for me).

Many of these idioms are used in comparison, thus:
—\textit{Is fearr leam or na aiglod} “I prefer gold to silver.”

590. The preposition do “to” and the prepositional pronouns formed from it also combine with the verbs \textit{is} and \textit{bu} in representing a number of English verbs, as:
—\textit{is urrainn do} “can”; \textit{is urrainn domh} “I can”; \textit{is aithne do} “know.”

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{is aithne}¹ \textit{domh}, I know.
  \item \textit{is mithich}³ \textit{domh}, it is time for me.
  \item \textit{is eudar}² \textit{domh}, I must.
  \item \textit{is eiginn}⁴ \textit{domh}, I must.
  \item \textit{is urrainn}⁵ \textit{domh}, I can.
  \item \textit{is urrainn duinn}, we can.
  \item \textit{b’ urrainn domh}, I could.
  \item \textit{b’ urrainn duinn}, we could.
  \item \textit{is coir dhomh}, I ought.
  \item \textit{is eudar dhomh}, I must.
  \item \textit{b’ eudar dhomh}, I was obliged (had to).
\end{itemize}

¹ anū; ² ādūr; ³ my ych; ⁴ ākynn; ⁵ oor ynn.

591. \textbf{Exercises.}

\textit{Vocabulary.}

\textit{gus}, prep. to, till. \textit{air ais}, adv., back.

592. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:

593. Translate into Gaelic:
he ought to have told us. 15. You may stay if you wish, but I know you ought to go. 16. He did not do what he could. 17. He ought to have done what he could. 18. If he does not do what he can, he ought not to be here. 19. He could not see, but he could speak. 20. You ought to tell what you know. 21. I might see you in the evening.

LESSON LI.

594. The Preposition.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>preposition</th>
<th>singular</th>
<th>plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>aig, at</td>
<td>aig</td>
<td>aig</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air, on, upon</td>
<td>air</td>
<td>air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>anns (awns) in.</td>
<td>anns</td>
<td>anns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ann an, in a.</td>
<td>ann an</td>
<td>ann an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a, as, out of.</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bho, o, from, out of.</td>
<td>bho</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de (tchä) of.</td>
<td>de</td>
<td>de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>do, to, into.</td>
<td>do</td>
<td>to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eadar (ätür) between.</td>
<td>eadar</td>
<td>eadar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gun, without.</td>
<td>gun</td>
<td>gun</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

anns, as, gus, leis, ris, are the forms used before the article or relative pronouns.

595. The simple prepositions govern the dative case, so that when we have an indefinite noun following a preposition we have:—

The dative singular masculine like the nominative singular.
The dative singular feminine like the genitive feminine with the omission of the final e.
The dative plural masculine like the genitive singular.
The dative plural feminine adds an or ean to the nominative singular.

596. But when the noun is definite and we have the preposition followed by the definite article, aspiration takes place in the dative case singular, both masculine and feminine. Definite nouns with an initial d, l, n, r, s, t, do not aspirate (par. 38).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Indefinite.</th>
<th>Definite.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>air bord, on a table.</td>
<td>air a' bhord, on the table.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air gruaidh, on a cheek.</td>
<td>air a' gruaidh, on the cheek.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ann am baile, in a town.</td>
<td>anns a' bhaile, in the town.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Indefinite.

- **ann an dorus,** in a door.
- **ann an cathair,** in a chair.
- **a tigh,** out of a house.
- **le bata,** with a stick.
- **ri duine,** to a man.

### Definite.

- **anns an dorus,** in the door.
- **anns a' chathair,** in the chair.
- **as an tigh,** out of the house.
- **leis a' bhata,** with the stick.
- **ris an duine,** with the man.

597. The prepositions do “to”; fo “under”; bho “from”; mar “like” “as”; mu “about”; troimh “through”; roimh “before”; de “of” aspirate in the dative singular both definite and indefinite nouns as well as conforming to the rule aforementioned.

598. Observe that an indefinite noun beginning with d, t, s, aspirates, but when the same noun is definite it resists aspiration as the effect of following the dental n of the article.

### Indefinite.

- **de cheo,** of mist.
- **do chill,** to a grave.
- **fo bhord,** under a table.
- **mar chraobh,** like a tree.
- **mu phairt,** about a part.
- **o mhod,** from a court.
- **roimh ghunna,** before a gun.
- **troimh thir,** through a land.
- **fo dhorn,** under a fist.
- **do shuil,** to an eye.

### Definite.

- **de'n cheo,** of the mist.
- **do'n chill,** to the grave.
- **fo'n bhord,** under the table.
- **mar a' chraobh,** like the tree.
- **mu'n phairt,** about the part.
- **o'n mhod,** from the court.
- **roimh' n ghunna,** before the gun.
- **troimh' n tir,** through the land.
- **fo'n dorn,** under the fist.
- **do'n t-suil,** to the eye.

599. The simple Gaelic preposition is capable of being used very extensively. The most peculiar of its uses is to form a compound with the pronouns, of which we give a complete list. The contents of this table should be familiar to every would-be-learner of Gaelic (par. 404).

600. **eadar** “between” governs the accusative case which is the same as the nominative in Gaelic.

- Eadar fear agus bean, **between man and wife.**
- Eadar a' chlach agus a' chraobh, **between the stone and the tree.**

**The Preposition ann “in.”**

601. **ann an,** **ann am.** Observe the duplication of the preposition **ann** here, it is used in this form before an indefinite noun both singular and plural and may be called an emphatic form. (See also the particle **ann** (Lessons 16, 35).
602. **ann an** “in” before a definite noun, which in turn is qualified by another noun in the genitive, may give the student some trouble. It has always been a stumbling block to learners. The duplication is common in all writing, but good Gaelic writers are coming to avoid it more and more.

*Ann an comhairle nan aingidh,*  
*in the counsel of the wicked.*

*Ann an slighe nam peacach,*  
*in the way of sinners.*

*Ann an lagh an Tighearna,*  
*in the law of the Lord.*

*Ann an tigh-a-mhinisteir,*  
*in the minister's manse.*

*An ait a mhic,*  
*in the place of his son.*

**ann an** in these sentences is this duplicated or emphatic preposition **ann** “in” and must not be mistaken or confused with the article and preposition **anns an,** **anns a’,** “in the.” A definite noun qualified by a definite noun never takes the article (par. 212, 289, 290). Don’t be misled by the English idiom.

603. **anns an** “in the” is often contracted into **'s an.**

*'S an tir (for anns an tir),*  
*in the land.*

*'S na h-aitibh sin,*  
*in these places.*

**Idiomatic uses of the preposition “of.”**

604. The preposition “of” is one which has many applications and meanings, both in English and Gaelic. We will endeavour to classify the more common uses as follows:—

(a) **Source, origin, cause, possession.**

(b) **Class, rank, or a partitive reference.**

(c) **“Of” has the meaning of “among,” “on,” “from,” “taking from,” etc.**

(d) **“Of” expressing a property, quality, or attribute.**

(e) **A verbal form “the better of it,” etc.**

(a) **“Of”** coming between two English nouns is not translated into Gaelic. We employ the genitive case as that case in Gaelic, as in certain other languages, gives the idea of source, origin, cause, possession, etc. (par. 212, 289).

(b) **“Of”** may mean class, rank, or have a partitive reference, when it is rendered by **de** (same as the French **de**); whenever it follows numerals; adjectives of the
comparative and superlative degree; partitives; nouns denoting fullness, abundance or scarcity. The noun following de being in the dative (pars. 302, 342).

Aird de 'n teaghlach, the tallest of the family.
Cuid de na fir, some of the men.

Before a noun or adjective beginning with a vowel or an f followed by a vowel de is written dh'; thus:—dh' fhear "of a man"; dh' aon inntinn "of one mind." In current practice the favourite mode of showing aspiration where de is used before f or a vowel, appears to be a dh', which is a duplication of the preposition, thus:—a dh' fhear; a dh' aon inntinn.

Armailt mhor de dhaoinibh agus a dh' eachaibh,

Again observe, we say, pios iaruinn, where iaruinn is in the genitive; pios de iarunn or pios de dh' iarunn—iarunn being the dative after the preposition de.

(c) "Of" may have the sense of the genitive plural of the personal pronouns when it follows words denoting a part. It may mean "some of us," "how many of us," "among," "on," "from," as:—gach fear againn "each man of us"; cia agaibh "which of you"; cia aca "which of them" (not dinn "of us"; dibh "of you" etc). Cia aca is fearr leat? "Which of them do you like best?" = "which do you prefer?" But this is peculiar to the plural of these prepositional pronouns only, compare, "he spoke of him," i.e. "on him" as "on a subject," labhair e air; "he spoke of us" labhair e oirnn.

"Of = from" Fear o Ghlaschu, "a man from Glasgow" = "a man of Glasgow" = "a Glasgow man." Rinn se e ualthe fein "he did it of himself" (lit. "from" = "it proceeded from him as the originator.")

"Of, off" in the sense of "taking from"; "of" possession; motion "out of."

Thug e 'n diollaid de'n each, he took the saddle off the horse.
Tha gu leor agam dheth, I have enough of it.
Gerrar sliseag de'n mhulachagh,
cut a slice from the cheese.
Mac do dh' Alasdair,
a son to (of) Alexander.
Thainig an t-eun as an ubh,
the chicken has come out of the egg.
As an uisge,
out of the water.
(d) When "of" expresses property, quality, or attribute, "of" has no equivalent in Gaelic. In the absence of any preposition the noun remains in the nominative case (par. 304).

Fear is mor neart, a man of great strength.
Fear is mo ciall, a man of the greatest sense.

(e) An idiomatic application of "of" in phrases like is truimide am poca "the bag is the heavier of it." Truimide being a verbal form compounded of truime "heavy" and deth "of it" (par. 364).

"Perhaps," "probably," "likely" are translated by moide (compounded of mo "greater" from mor "great" and de "of it"); i.e. "greater probability of it") (par. 364).

Cha moide gu 'n thainig e, very likely he has not come.
Cha moide gu 'm bheil thu slan, perhaps you are not quite well.

605. The Preposition air.

We have already given phrases where air is used idiomatically.

1st—air is used to express any quality of mind or body; tha acras orm "I am hungry" (Lesson XV.); rest:—
air a'bhord "on the table."

2nd—air means "in." The words denoting measure and weight are followed by air:—

Mile air fad, a mile in length.
Slat air airde, a yard in height.
Punnd air chudthrom, a pound in weight.

3rd—Buying and selling. Air stands for "for," in this sense it is placed before the noun of price or the thing priced. "What is the price for that coat?" is translated into Gaelic ciid tha air a' chota sin? or cia an luach tha an cota sin? as if the price were marked on the article. To buy a thing for or at a certain price is to buy it on that price, as:—fhuair e an leabhar sin air tasdain "he got that book for (on) a shilling" (see note page 98).

606. The Preposition do "to."

Do is used as a preposition with the infinitives of verbs. It has been changed in its form probably as the effect of
aspiration to a in connection with infinitives beginning with a consonant; thus instead of being written do bhi "to be" it is now the common practice to write a bhi, and so with the other consonant infinitives. With infinitives beginning with a vowel or f followed by a vowel the form of the preposition is a dh'; thus, a dh' ol "to drink"; a dh' itheadh "to eat"; a dh' fhagail "to leave"; but, a fhreagairt "to answer," where f is followed by a consonant (par. 538).

607. The Preposition ri "to."

Ri signifying "to," "towards" has when placed instead of ag before the verbal noun, the effect of changing its signification into that of a future tense of the passive voice, thus:—ri fhaicinn "to be seen." Ri has also the effect of "at," "against," "during," "in," etc.

Tha e ri brogan, he is (at) making shoes.

608. The Preposition gu "to."

Gu signifies that the motion terminates at the object, as:—gu tigh an duine "to the man's house" (and no further); gus an dorus "to the door" (and no further); gu Glaschu, "to Glasgow"; gu tuath, "to north." Before the verbal noun gu intimates the beginning of motion, as:—tha iad gu falbh "they were about going," "on the point of going." The same particle is used as an adverbial prefix to convert adjectives into adverbs and then corresponds to the English suffix "ly":—gu mor "very great," "greatly"; gu h-olc "badly." "Fcr," "during," gu brath, gu siorruidh "for ever" (pars. 452, 577).

609. The Preposition gun "without."

Gun signifies "without"; before a noun it corresponds to the English affix "less"; is equivalent to the negative "not."

Gun eolas, without knowledge. Gun airgioid, without money.

Gun chiall, senseless. Gun churam, careless.

Dh'aithn e dhomh gun sin a dheanamh, he ordered me not to do that.
610. The Prepositions aig, and le.

For idioms with the preposition aig, "at" see Lesson XII. For the preposition le "with," "in possession," etc. see Lesson XX.

611. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

612. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. Where were you this morning? 2. I was fishing. 3. Who was with you? 4. John, the fisherman's son, was with me. 5. Was that man not with them? 6. The house is between the river and the sea. 7. The boys go home during the summer. 8. We like fishing on the river in the evening. 9. I went round the house about five o'clock. 10. I found a man at the window. 11. Which of them do you prefer to come with you this time? 12. I must go to the town now. 13. You ought not to go alone. 14. I will come with you to-day. 15. I am going to the town alone. 16. You can go now and you can be there before me. 17. I was before you at the bridge to-day but he was there before me. 18. You were before me at the town last night. 19. This wall is high, but I am going over it (m). 20. The rain is heavy but it is going past us. 21. That man is going over the river in a boat. 22. Do not stand between me and the fire. 23. It is cold and the wind is going through me. 24. John was between us this morning, but James is between you and me now. 25. This is too big for me now. 26. The wind will go through it. 27. He was without money or sense. 28. You speak of him as being senseless. 29. He is a man of the greatest sense. 30. He must be an educated man. 31. He has come in place of his father. 32. I fell into a hole and almost broke my leg. 33. We have come through a land without trees.
LESSON LII.

THE COMPOUND PREPOSITION.

613. Compound prepositions are mostly formed of a noun and simple preposition and are generally followed by the genitive case of the qualifying noun. That it should do so is according to rule, as will be seen when the sentence is transposed into Gaelic idiom (par. 290). "For the girl" we transpose to "for the sake of the girl" air son na caileige. Whose sake? The girl's sake. Caileige here is the genitive of caileag, qualifying the noun son.

Further examples:—
An lathair an t-sluagh, before the people—in presence of the people.
An aghaidh naidur, against nature—in the face of nature.

614. Compound prepositions are mostly formed of a noun and simple preposition and are generally followed by the genitive case of the qualifying noun. That it should do so is according to rule, as will be seen when the sentence is transposed into Gaelic idiom (par. 290). "For the girl" we transpose to "for the sake of the girl" air son na caileige. Whose sake? The girl's sake. Caileige here is the genitive of caileag, qualifying the noun son.

Further examples:—
An lathair an t-sluagh, before the people—in presence of the people.
An aghaidh naidur, against nature—in the face of nature.

615. The pronouns governed by these prepositions:—

(1) are placed between the simple preposition and the noun and

(2) are rendered in the genitive case.

Ann ar measg, in the midst of us (lit.: in our midst).
Os bhur cionn, above you (,, over your head).
Air do chulaobh, behind you (,, at your back).
Air mo shon, for me (,, for my sake).

616. That these prepositions should in this way govern the pronouns is quite natural, as is plain from their meaning.
In English the words "in our midst" is the same as "in the midst of us"; the possessive pronoun "our" holds the same place as the genitive personal pronoun "of us"; its corresponding term in Gaelic is ar, "of us" = "our"; it is compounded with the preposition ann thus:—'nar measg "in our midst" (pars. 422-4).

617. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—
1. Tha an cu donn air do chulaobh. 2. Chunnaic mi an duine air beulaobh an tighe. 3. Bha e 'na sheasamh ri h-aghaidh. 4. An uair a bha sinn 'nar seasamh aig an dorus thilig am balach beag clachan 'nar measg. 5. Cheannaich an duine na leabhraichean 'nam lathair. 6. Bha mise air feadh na coille anns a' mhaduinn agus fhuair mi uan beag aig ceann an rathaid. 7. Chaidh mi mu 'n cuairt air a' gharradh agus fhuair mi clachan mora ann an aide nan craobhan. 8. Chaidh e a steach do 'n tigh. 9. Chuir e a lammh air mo cheann agus shuidhe mise air a bheulaobh. 10. Thainig mi a dh'ionnsaidh na h-aibhne agus chunnaic mi caora comhla ris an uan. 11. Dh'fhag mi an cu comhla ris na h-eich. 12. Am bheil an cu dubh comhla riutha? 13. Cha'n eil. 14. Chaidh sinn mu 'n cuairt air a' phairc. 15. Chaidh mo dheidh chu air thoiseach orm is rinn e oirre.

618. Translate into Gaelic:—
1. I saw a man in front of the house. 2. My faithful dog ran in front of me towards him. 3. We were standing at the door and a big boy threw stones amongst us. 4. There is a black cat behind you. 5. Strike it with a stick for me. 6. We will go round about the house now. 7. Have you heard concerning that man yet? 8. I have come for the purpose of speaking about that. 9. Will you come along with me into the house? 10. What is that above us? 11. The wind is against us; will we take shelter behind this wall? 12. That house opposite is mine. 13. I have it in place of one I lost by fire. 14. He came amongst us. 15. We went for the sake of the girl. 16. I put my hand on her head and she sat in front of me. 17. When we were sitting at the window a bad boy threw stones amongst us. 18. We sent the dog after him and he ran in front of a man. 19. The minister was standing there in the presence of the people. 20. We were at sea and we lost the oars during the night.

LESSON LIII.

THE ADVERB.

619. Adverbs are not so called because they are added to verbs, for they are joined to other words, including verbs, for the purpose of modifying references to time, place, manner, and quality.
620. Most adjectives can be converted into adverbs by placing gu before them. Gu expresses the same as the English suffix "ly" does; gu prefixes h- before vowels. Thus math "good" an adjective becomes adverbial when gu is placed before it, gu math "well"; olc "bad"; gu h-olc "badly, worse." Gu used thus before an adjective has of itself no definite meaning; an adjective used with gu to limit a verb suffers no change; no addition is made to it; an adjective used with gu is subject to limitation by another adjective.

Thuit clach gu luath,  
Thuit clach gu math luath,  
Tha e gu math dheth,  
a stone fell quickly.  
a stone fell very quickly.  
he is well off (off it.)

621. The prefixed particles—glé, fior, ro*—denote a higher degree of quality; they also aspirate their adjectives.  
glé mhath, very well.  
ro dhileas, exceedingly faithful.

622. Compound adverbs or adverbial phrases are generally made up of the article and prepositions combined with nouns and adjectives. Some of these adverbial phrases, in certain circumstances, are regarded as prepositions.

623.  
Adverbs of Time.

roimhe (royu) before.  
cian, ages ago, far distant.  
cheana (chenu) already.  
a chlisgeadh, quickly.  
a chaoidh, for ever (future).  
a nis, nise, now.  
a ris, rithist, again.  
ainnig (animik) seldom.  
am feadh, whilst.  
am feasd (fast) for ever.  
am maireach, to-morrow.  
an ceart uair, presently.  
an comhnuidh (ung kony), habitually, continually.  
an de, yesterday.  
an diugh, to-day.  
an earar (ear-thrath), the day after to-morrow.  
an nochd, to-night.  
an raoir (rooyr) last night.  
an uraidh (oor-y last year.  
am bliadhna, this year.  
an trath so)  
an drasda } just now.  
an toiseach, first.  
an uair ('nuair) (nooûr) when.  
kuin? c'uin? (koon) when?  
a la, by day, daily.  
a dh'oidhche (ghoy chu) by night.  
a ghnath } always.  
do ghnath/  
fadheoidh (fa y o y) at last.  
fathast (fah-üst) yet.  
gu brath, for ever.  
gu minig } often, frequently.  
gu tric  
gu siorruidh, (shyorry) for ever.  
idir (y tchûr) at all.  
mu dheireadh (y ärûgh) at last.  
re seal } for a time.  
re tamuill/  
riamh (ree-ûv) ever (past).

* ro is an old particle (identical with Latin pro) surviving in disguise as a particle however in only two verbal forms, robh and rinn, although it is in common use as a particle intensifying the signification of an adjective: thus mor "great"; ro mhor, "very great."
624. Adverbs of Place.

- an ear (ún er) east.
- an iar (ún eēr) west.
- a bhoss, bhoss, on this side (rest).
- a leith taobh, to one side.
- a mach, out, without,
- a muigh, outside.
- a bhan, downwards (motion).
- an aird, upwards (motion).
- a null, null, to this side.
- a nuas, from above, down.
- a nios, from below, up.
- an sin, there.
- an so, here.
- an sud, yonder.

- tuath (tooū) north.
- deas (tchāss) south.
- a thaoibh, aside.
- a steach, within, inside,
- a stigh, into.
- far (before am, an, nach), where
- seachadh, past.
- sios (shyūs) downwards (motion).
- suas (soōs) upwards (motion).
- shios (hhyūs) below, down (rest).
- shuas (khooūs) above (rest).
- thall, on the other side (rest).
- an sud 's an so, here and there
- c'aite? (kātchī) where? (inter.)

625. Adverbs of Manner, etc.

- anabarrach, exceedingly.
- air eigninn, scarcely.
- air leith, apart, separately.
- air seacharan, astray.
- a mhain, only.
- amhul, like as.
- am bhitheantas, usually.
- comhla, together.
- da rireadh, really.
- fa leith, individually.
- gle, ro, fior, very truly.
- gu buileach, thoroughly.
- uidh air n-uidh, gradually.

- gu dearbh, truly.
- gu cinnteach, certainly.
- gu leir, altogether.
- gu leoir, enough, plenty.
- le cheile, together.
- mar an ceudna, likewise.
- maraon (araon), together.
- mar sin, as that.
- mar so, as this.
- mar sud, as yon.
- mu seach, alternately.
- theagamh, perhaps.

626. A number of adverbs denote a state of rest, motion to, and from. Note carefully the rendering of some of these, and principally the rendering of the English words “up” and “down.”

A suas and a sios are used when there is motion “up” or “down” from where we stand; shuas and shios are used for “rest” at some distance “above” or “below” us; a nuas and a nios are used when there is motion “towards” us from “above” or “below.” A bhos is used when there is a question of “rest” near us; and thall when there is “rest” some distance away. Verbs of “rest” are used with adverbs of “rest”; and verbs of “motion” with adverbs of “motion.”

“A chaidh sios (went down) gu h-ífrinn; a dh’ eirich an treas la o mharbhaibh, a chaidh suas (went up) air neamh.”—A’ Chreud.

“He descended into Hell; the third day He rose again from the dead; and ascended into Heaven”—The Creed.

Tha e shuas ann an neamh, *He is up in heaven.*
627. Deas and tuath also mean “right” and “left” hand. As regards the points of the compass, the observer, like the ancient Druids and sun-worshippers of old, is supposed to face the rising sun. Thus “the east” is called an ear, meaning “before,” “in front of,” the land or country immediately in front of the observer; the country to the “right hand” is thus the “south,” hence an deas; for the same reason the “north” was called an tuath, the country to the “left hand”; and the “west” an iar, the country at the “back,” “after,” “behind,” i.e., the “hinterland,” because in this way it was to them the land to which the “back” was turned. From these we have:

- o'n deas, from the south.
- gaorth o'n deas, the south wind.
- o'n tuath, from the north.
- gaorth o'n tuath, the north wind.

628. Vocabulary.

- Sloc. nm. or nf., a pit, a hole.
- Gaidhlig (gâlik) nf. Gaelic (language).

629. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:


630. Translate into Gaelic:

1. The shepherd went up the hill in the morning but he came down in the afternoon. 2. He went out of town. 3. Was he ever from home before? 4. He was from home last year. 5. When will he come home? 6. Where is your son? 7. He is in the house at the side of the river. 8. Will he cross the river? 9. He will not cross to the other side to-day. 10. The river rose gradually. 11. His dog is running here and there. 12. He has been in my house but he will never (say “not ever”) be in it again. 13. Have you any Gaelic?
14. I have plenty Gaelic.  15. We always speak Gaelic in this place.
16. Where is your other son to-night?  17. They went out together.
18. I came up from Glasgow this morning and I go down again the
day after to-morrow.  19. According to John I should go oftener.
20. It is better to go oftener certainly.  21. I cannot go at present.
22. I saw him on the other side of the river among the trees.  23.
He comes often but seldom stays long.  24. When will he be back
I am going over the ocean to the great west land and it is not likely
I will come eastwards again.  27. I may go to the south next year.

LESSON LIV.

Conjunctions.

Simple Conjunctions.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ach</th>
<th>but</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>agus, 's, is</td>
<td>and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bho'n, o'n, a chionn, coma, eadhon, ged</td>
<td>since. however. though.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gidheadh, gu</td>
<td>yet, nevertheless.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>na</th>
<th>than.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ma</td>
<td>if.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mu'n</td>
<td>before, lest.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur</td>
<td>if not.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mar</td>
<td>like, as.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>no</td>
<td>or.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oir</td>
<td>for, because.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co, cho</td>
<td>as, so.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ri</td>
<td>as.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

632. Note.—The word " only" is usually put in Gaelic
by using the negative verb and the conjunction ach, " but ";
e.g., cha robh aige ach da each (He had not but two horses).
He had only two horses.

633. The conjunction couples like cases of nouns, tenses
of verbs, etc.

Thuit agus bhrist clach,  a stone fell and broke.
Fion agus bainne,  wine and milk.
Cha mheal e sith no solas,  he shall not enjoy peace nor comfort.
Thig no cha tig e,  he shall come or shall not.
Bagair ach na buail,  threaten but don't strike.

634. Some conjunctions are used in pairs and are said
to be co-relative.

Cho or co expressing a comparison requires ri or ris.

Tha e cho geal ris an t-sneachd,  it is as white as snow.
Tha Iain cho ard ri Seumas,  John is as tall as James.
Tha ise cho glic riut-sa,  she is as wise as you.
635. When cho signifies “so”; when a certain condition is pointed out; when it is followed by a verb; agus is the co-relative of cho.

Tha e cho math agus is feumail dha, he is as good as is necessary.
Bi cho math agus an dorus beosgadh, be so good as to open the door.
Cha robh mi cho bronach agus dall, I was not so mournful and blind.
Bha e cho trom agus nach do thog mi e, it was so heavy that I did not lift it.
Tha e cho laidir agus a bhithease, he is as strong as he will be.
Bha e cho cinnteach agus gu’n do chuir e geall, he was so certain that he laid (put) a wager.

636. Cho signifies “as” when followed by ri, le, etc.

Tha e cho caoin ri uan, he is as mild as a lamb (as=that he can be compared with a lamb).

637. Interjections.

ma seadh! verily!
ob ob! alas!
ochon a righ! alas!
mata! well!
mo chreacht! alas!
seadh! ay!
gu deimhinn! verily!
mo thuraighe! alas!
da rireadh! verily!
och, och! dear, dear!

An interjection requires the vocative case of nouns (aspirated).

638. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—


639. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Is it man or woman? 2. My house and garden. 3. Mary and her sister are here. 4. Her sister is as tall as ever she will be. 5. She was so certain that she was coming here. 6. I will have no peace nor comfort now. 7. Be so good as to shut the door and open the window. 8. John is as wise as Mary. 9. Is that according to John. 10. I shall go or shall not according to time. 11. Nevertheless it is your duty to go. 12. Good-night. 13. Good-bye.
The Gaelic Language.

640. As an organ of intellectual expression and as a means of producing an aesthetical effect, what sort of language have we got? As an organ of intellectual expression, the Gaelic, in common with Greek, German, Sanskrit, and all self-evolved languages, has the advantage of being able on all occasions to fling out new branches from the native stem and to grow to exuberant enlargement as occasion may require. What a patch-work has been our old Saxon, by the bitter frost that nipped its early budding, and the constant habit of borrowing thence resulting, the learned among us, as well as the unlearned though in very different ways, are constantly made to feel. The English language, as we have it now, is not so much a coherent growth as a disturbed organism. Our words accordingly are not coins with an intelligible sign and superscription, but mere counters. How different is Gaelic, where every word tells the story of its own composition to the unlettered peasant as vividly as to the most learned etymologist. A whale, for instance, is muc-mhara, literally "a sow of the sea;" "an adopted son" is uchd-mhac, literally "a son of the bosom," as contrasted with the womb; a swallow is gobhlan-gaoithe, i.e. "a bird that oars the breeze with its forky tail"; while the word cruthachadh, "to create" used in the first verse of the first chapter of Genesis, to a Highland laddie under a competent teacher will at once suggest the fundamental notion of the Platonic philosophy is that cruth or "form" is the necessary and legitimate product of the action of Divine reason upon matter. Now every one knows that the English language, without a long process of root-digging in Greek and Roman soil, cannot be made to yield such significant results; and therefore the Gaelic language for the education of the Highland peasantry has an advantage which English to the English peasant has not, and can never be made to have. But from this great advantage the poor Highlander has got little benefit, partly from the neglect of his language by schoolmasters and people of the middle and upper classes; partly from the fact that beyond the sphere of the Scriptures and popular theology the language has received very scanty culture, and so instead of developing its own native powers
it has fallen into a general habit of pilfering from the English.

The consequence is that though the Gaelic dictionary contains Celtic equivalents for such modern scientific terms as "chemistry," feallsanachd-brighe, yet as they have obtained no currency among the people, who in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred cannot spell the tongue which they speak, they are not to be regarded as forming part of the language; and even in talking of objects which move in the familiar sphere of common life, for every Highlander that asks for his biadh-maidne nine hundred and ninety-nine would ask for his "breakfast."—Prof. J. S. Blackie.

How to Learn to Read Gaelic.

It was when well up in years that Professor John Stuart Blackie, in his rambling flights through the Highlands, began to take an interest in Gaelic. He says, "I began to gather a small collection of Gaelic words from the mere names of the places through which I travelled, aided by accidental incidents. The very name of the broad sloping ben, which I saw every morning, had its meaning and suggested cognate words to me. I am setting down these small personal experiences of mine, principally because I have found a notion generally prevalent that it is an extremely difficult language to learn and not to be overcome by any ordinary resolution. For the sake of those who may be disposed to follow in my track through these unfrequented ways I will jot down here the remaining steps of my procedure in the acquaintance of that venerable old tongue. I took the Gaelic Bible which, from my previous acquaintance with the English, I soon learnt to read. A Gaelic Grammar helped me over the difficulties of flexion. Southey, I remember, somewhere in his diary says, 'that it was his fashion always to commence the study of a new language with a version of the New Testament,' and there can be no doubt that to those who know their Bibles there can be no better method proposed. The language of both Gaelic and English versions is classic, and about the best to be had. Let the student read the Gaelic Bible daily, along with the English, and translate the one back into the other alternatively, and this will be a hundred times more
efficient than any other method, and will work the language into his head.

"Various entertaining scraps of biography, history, and fictitious narrative furnished me, by degrees, with a large vocabulary, but gave no help in the ready use of those colloquial terms which are most necessary for intercourse with the people. To remedy this, my studies turned to the 'West Highland Tales' and the dialogues in 'Caraid nan Gaidheal.' After this I kept steadily reading for an hour or two a day, till by frequent repetition the dictionary became superfluous. This, of course, is merely a matter of resolution and determination."

There have been published recently several volumes of Gaelic Tales, accompanied by English translations, legends and translations being printed on opposite pages, page for page. This has been done to help students of the language and enable them to arrive at the meaning of every sentence with ease and at once. The Gaelic and the English translations are so arranged into short paragraphs that there will be no difficulty in following the grammar. These are well calculated to help and encourage the student and sure to make him take pleasure in Gaelic.

A NEW GAELIC NUMERATION.

We have in Gaelic Self Taught kept to the present standards of the language. There is no doubt that a few improvements on standard Gaelic could be made—there is no living language perfect (and least of all is English). The following suggested improvement in the method of Gaelic numeration is put forward for consideration by the Gaelic Academy and Gaelic writers generally for gradual adoption.*

The "vigintal" system of numeration, as we may term the present Gaelic system, is a departure from the old decimal system of counting which still survives in the language of our cousins in Ireland. Our signs, both Roman and Arabic, are based on "tens," but in order to write or say mixed figures in words, we have at present to subject our minds to an acrobatic feat, e.g. take the figure "seventy-nine," this, after our mental struggle, becomes

* See an article by E. M. D. in "Alba," No. 10, new series.
“three-twenties-and-nineteen” tri fichead ’s naoi deug. Arithmetic can never be successfully taught in Gaelic unless we change from this method.

The decimal system only requires a beginning. After naoi air thichead “twenty-nine” will come trichead “thirty”; then trichead ’s a h-aon “thirty-one”; etc; ceithreachad “forty”; caogad “fifty”; siathad “sixty”; seachdad “seventy”; ochdad “eighty”; naochad “ninety”; and so on with the higher numerals. Compare the effect of using such decimals in the following example:

“If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold.” Gen. iv. 24.

“Ma dhíolar Cain a sheadh uiread, gu deimhin diolar Lamech a sheadh deug agus a thri fichead uiread.”

This is the Gaelic of our familiar version, observe that we lose the pungency and the play on the figure words “seven” and “seventy-and-seven,” the effect of which is to be considered. In using these decimal tens, we preserve and realise to some extent this play on the words “seventy-and-seven” in seachdad ’s a seachd. Compare also the same as it is to be found in Bedel’s Irish Bible.

Used in columns for addition, subtraction, etc., thus:

<p>| | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>thirty-five</td>
<td>trichead ’s a coig</td>
<td>fichead ’s a h-aon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>twenty-one</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
<td>forty-three</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99</td>
<td>ninety-nine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SYNOPSIS OF ASPIRATION.

The following examples give the position and circumstances in which the initial letters are aspirated, if aspirable, for the exceptions see pars. 21 and 38. Some of the causes of aspiration can only be learned as they arise.

Nouns are aspirated after the possessive pronouns:—mo my; do thy; a his:—mo bhrog, do chu, a cheann.

Nouns commencing with a vowel are aspirated by the feminine possessive pronoun a her:—a h-athair her father.

Nouns are aspirated after the prepositions:—do to; mar like; de of; etc. (see pars, 595-6-7):—do bhaile, mar chloich, bho dhuine, mu Thom.

The initial consonant of a noun is aspirated when preceded by certain adjectives, and when the first noun of a compound term qualifies the second noun:—droch dhuine, cis-mhaor, cas-cheum.
The vocative of nouns in both genders, singular and plural, is aspirated: —A ghille! A ghillean!

Names of places, titles, and proper names of men are aspirated: — Cuil-thodair, Muilt Bharasdail, Faíte Shir Seumas, cas Dhomhnuill.

Nouns are aspirated after the numerals aon, da, a' cheud: — aon thear, da ghille, a' cheud mhac.

The definite article an “the” becomes a' and causes aspiration; after a preposition ending in a vowel becomes 'n and causes aspiration, of all aspirable nouns in genitive and dative singular masculine, and nominative and dative singular feminine: — aig a' ghille, do'n bhaile, a' chlach, aig a' chloich.

The definite article na aspirates nouns commencing with a vowel in the genitive singular feminine, and the nominative and dative plurals of both genders: — na h-aibhne, na h-aithrichean.

An adjective immediately following and qualifying a genitive singular masculine noun is aspirated. An adjective following a definite dative masculine noun is aspirated. An adjective following a nominative or dative singular feminine noun is aspirated: — an eich dhuinn, aig an each dhonn, bean mhór, leis a' chailleig bhig.

An adjective qualifying a nominative plural noun which is formed like the genitive singular is aspirated (par. 336): — na h-eich dhonna.

Compound nouns have the first consonant of the second word of the compound aspirated whether noun or adjective in agreement as an adjective with the gender of the first element. If the second element is a noun in the genitive plural it is aspirated in all cases: *balla-chlach, coileach-dubh, ceann a' choilic'-dhuibh.

Adjectives are aspirated after the intensive prefixes fior, ro, gle, sar (par. 621): — gle ghan, very clean. Gu before vowels (par. 620): — gu h-olc very badly.

Compound adjectives have the second element always aspirated: — fairge thonn-gheal (f), cuan tonn-gheal (m).

The verb is aspirated by the particles ma, cha (except d and t, par. 494); by the relative a (par. 440); the conjunction ged (page 123); the infinitive after do or a (par. 538). The past dependent and subjunctive are aspirated (Lessons xli., xlii.)

The verb bu aspirates words immediately following except initial d or t (par. 156): — bu cheart dhuit.

Some words are always aspirated when naturally they should not be: their will say, thoir give, thig come, gheibh will get, bho from, bhur your, etc.

Some words are found aspirated and unaspirated without regard to rule, fein thein self, ta tha is, domh dhomh to me, diom dhiom of me, etc.

* The Gaelic in this instance is more logical than English, balla-chlach is literally “a wall of stones.” This qualifying noun is in the genitive plural for after all “a stone wall” is “a wall made of stones” and Gaelic construes accordingly, “of stones” being translated in the genitive plural, not genitive singular—chloiche.
The usual grammatical abbreviations are used.

The words in parenthesis are, in the case of nouns, peculiar forms of the genitive; of verbs, forms of the verbal noun; of adjectives, forms of the comparative. The numbers refer to pars. in Gaelic Self Taught.

A, rel. pron., who, which, that.
A, poss. pron., his, her, its.
A', art., the.
Abair, irr. v., say (ag radh).
Abhag, nm., a terrier.
Abhainn (aibhne), nf., a river.
Ach, conj., but.
Achadh, nm., a field.
Acras, nm., hunger.
Ad (aide), nf., a hat.
Adharc, nf., a horn.
Agam, agad, etc. (see par. 114).
Aghaidh, an aghaidh, prep., in the face of, against.
Agus, conj., and.
Aig, ag, prep., at.
Aige, aice, etc. (see par. 114).
Air, prep., on (pp. on him, etc.) par. 138.
Air ball, adv., immediately.
Airgid (airgid), nm., money.
Air-sin, prep., for, because.
Aithne, nf., knowledge, acquaintance.
Aite, nm., a place.
Aite (an aite), prep., in place of.
Alba (Alba and Albainn), nf., Scotland.
Allt (uillt), nm., a brook.
An, am, art., the.
An, am, poss. pron., their.
An, am, interv. particle.
An, am, relative pron., whom.
Anmoch, adj. and adv., late.
An drasda, adv., now.
Ann, anns, prep., in, into.
Ann, adv., there, here.
Annam annad, etc. (p. p. 404).
Aon, h-aon, nu. adj., one.
Aodach, nm., a cloth, clothes.
Aonar, nu. n., one person, alone.
Ar, poss. pron., our.
Aran, nm., bread.
Arbhar, nm., corn in sheaf or growing.
Ard (airde), adj., high.
Arsa (ars'), defect. v., said.
As, prep., out of.
As (rel. form of verb, is) [etc.
Asam, asad, etc., out of us, you,
Athair (athar), nm., a father.
Ba, nf., cows; pl., of bó.
Baile, nm., a town, village.
Bainne, nm., milk.
Balach, nm., a boy.
Balla, nm., a wall.
Ban (baine), adj., white, fair.
Ban, bhan, gen. pl. of bean.
Barail (baraile or baralach), nf., an opinion.
Bard, nm., a poet.
Barr (barra), nm., a crop, top.
Bata, nm., staff.
Báta, nm., a boat.
Beag (bige or lugha), adj., small, little.
Bean (mnatha), nf., a woman.
Beanntan, pl., of beinn.
Beartach (beartaiche), adj., rich.
Beinn, nf., a mountain, hill.
Beir, irr. v., bear, bring forth (breith and beirsinn).
Beir (air), catch, seize.
Beulaobh (air), prep., in front of.
Bha, v. past, was, were.
Beil, dept. v., am, is, are.
Bheir, v., will give.
Bhitheas, bhios, rel. v., will be.
Bho, o, prep., from.
Bhos (a bhos), adv., down, below.
Bhur, ur, poss. pron., your.
Bhiam, bhuat (see par. 122).
Bi, v., be.
Biadh (bidhe), nm., food.
Bithinn, subj. v., would be.
Bith, vn., air bith, being.
Binn (binne), adj., sweet, melodious.
Blath, adj., warm.
Bliadhna (bliadhna), w/ a year; pL, bliadhnachan.
Bo (ba), «/., a cow.
Bochd (bochda), adj., poor.
Boidheach (boidhche), adj., pretty beautiful.
Borb (buirbe), adj., fierce.
Bord (buird), nm., a table, board.
Bradan, nm., a salmon.
Brath, gu brath, adv., for ever.
Brathair (brathar), nm., a brother.
Breat, v., kick.
Breac (bric), nm., a trout.
Breac (brice), adj., spotted, speckled.
Breug (breige), nm., a lie.
Brist, v., break (britsead).
Briste, v. adj., broken.
Brog, n., a shoe.
Bronach, adj., sad.
Bruch, nf., a bank, brink.
Buachail (buachaille), nm., a shepherd.
Buth (butha), nf., a shop, pLS., buthan (buthannan, buthean).
Cabhag, nf., a hurry, haste.
Cach, indef. pron., the rest, the others.
Cach-a-cheile, one another.
Caidil, v., sleep (cadal).
Caileag (caileige), nf., a little girl.
Cailite, v. adj., lost.
C’aite? inter., where?
Dearg (delrge), adj., red.
Deas, nf., the south (for, an aire deas— the s. a'irt), the right hand.
Deich, nu. adj., ten.
Deicheamh, nu. adj., tenth.
Deidh (an deidh), prep. and adv., after.
Deoch (dibhe), nf., a drink; pl., deochan or deochannan.
Deug, nu. particle, teen.

Dhachaidh (dachaidh), home-wards; adv., is generally aspirated.

Dhiom, dihot, etc. (p.p. de, 404).
Dhomh, dhuirt, etc. (p.p. do, 404).
Diubh, pp., of them.
Diugh (an diugh), adv., to-day.
Do, poss. pron., thy.
Do, prep., to.
Dol, a' dol, vn., going.
Dunn (duinne), adj., brown.
Dorus, nm., a door.
Dorcha, adj., dark.
Drasda (an drasda), adv., just now.

Droch, adj., bad—precedes the noun always.

Druid, v., shut, close (druideadh).
Druide, v. adj., closed.

Dubh (duibhe), adj., black.
Dubh, gen. masc., of dubh.

Duiibh, pp., to you; pl.

Duneideann, Edinburgh.
Duin, v., close, shut (dunadh).

Duiine, nm., a man.
Duit, pp., to thee (see dhomh).

Dun, nm., a hill, a heap.

Duthaich (duthcha), nf., a country; pl. duthchannan.

E, pron., he; him.
Each (eich), nm., a horse.
Eadar, prep., between.
Eadarainn (p.p. 404).

Eadh, seadh, that's it, it is.
Eagal, nm., fear.

Eallach, nm., a load, a burden.
Ear, the east (for, an aire deas 'n ear).

Earar, day after to-morrow.
Eiginn (or eigin), indef. pron., some, see cuid eiginn.
Eile, indef. pron., other, another.
Eilid (eild, eilde), nf., a hind.
Eirich, v., rise (eirigh).
Eolach (eolaiche), adj., acquainted, skilled.
Eun (coin), nm., a bird; pl., eoin.
Facal, nm., a word.
Fada, adj., long.
Fag, v., leave (fagail).
Fagus (faisge), adj., near.
Faigh, irr. v., get (see irr. verbs).
Falbh, v., go (falbh).
Fan, v., wait (fantainn).
Fang (fainge), nf., a sheep-pen.
Faod, v., depend, form of faodaidh.
Faodaidh mi, etc., I, thou, etc., may.
Faotainn (see faigh).
Far, adv., where.
Fas, v. grow.
Feadan, nm., pipe, a chanter.
Feadh, air feadh, prep., among, through.
Feairrd, adv., better, best.
Fear (fir), nm., a man.
Fear-ciuil, nm., a musician.
Fearr (see math).
Feasgar, nm., evening.
Fein, emph. part., self.
Feum (feuma), nm. and f., need, use.
Feumaidh mi, thu, etc., I, thou, etc., must.
Fiacail (fiacla), nf., a tooth.
Fiadh (feidh), nm., a deer.
Fiabhras, nm., a fever.
Fichead, nu. adj., twenty.
Fion, nm., wine.
Fios, nm., knowledge, information.
Fhathast, fathast, adv., yet.
Fhuair, v., past tense of faigh.
Fliuch (fluiche or fliche), adj., wet.
Fo, prep., under.
Fodham, fodhad (see p. 404).
Fosgail, v. open (fosgladh).
Fosgailte, v. adj., opened.
Fraoch, nm., heather.
Fras (froise), nf., a shower.
Fuar (fuaire), adj., cold.
Gabh, v. take.
Gach, indef. pron., each, every.
Gaidhlig, nm., Gaelic (language).
Gann, adj., scarce.
Gaol, nm., love.
Garradh, nm., a garden, a wall.
Geal (gile), adj., white.
Gealach, nf., moon.
Gearr, v., cut (gearradh).
Ged, conj., though.
Geug (geige), nf., a branch.
Geur (geire, geoire), adj., sharp.
Gheibh, irr. v., will get.
Gille, nm., a lad, youth.
Gin, indef. pron., any.
Glas., v., lock (glasadh).
Glas (glaise), adj., grey.
Glas (glaise), nf., a lock.
Glascho, Glasgow.
Gle, an intensive particle, very.
Gleone, nf., a glass, a pane.
Gorm (guirme), adj., blue.
Gradh, nm., love.
Grian (greine), nf., sun.
Gu, gus, prep., to.
Gu, conj. that; gu'n, that which.
Gu, prefixed to adjectives to form adverbs.
Gual, nm., coal.
Gun, prep., without.
Gur, v. part., that it is.
Gus, prep., to (the).
Guth (gutha), nm., a voice.
I, ise, pers. pron., she, her, it.
Iad, iadsan, pers. pron., they.
Iain, nm., John.
Iar, west (an airde 'n-iar).
Iarr, v. ask, seek (iarraidh).
Iarunn, nm., iron.
Iasg (eisg), nm., a fish.
Iasgach, vn., a fishing.
Im (ime), nm., butter.
longantas, astonishment.
Innis, v., tell, relate (innseadh).
Innte, in her (see p.p. ann).
Is, v. emph., is.
Is, a conj., and.
Ith, v. eat (itheadh).
La, latha, nm., a day; plur., lathair.
Labhair, v., speak (labhairt).
Lagh (lagha), nm., law.
Laidir (laidire or treasa), adj., strong.
Lair (laire, larach), wth., a mare.
Laighe, vn., lying down.
Lamh, nf., a hand.
Lathair, prep., ann an lathair, in the presence of.
Le, leis, prep., with.
Leabhar, nm., a book.
Leam, leat, etc. (see par. 185).
Lean, v., follow, pursue (lean-tuinn).
Leir, gu leir, adv., altogether, wholly.
Leisg, adj., lazy.
Lear, gu leoir, enough.
Leth, nm., a half.
Leughadh, n. and vn., a reading, reading.
Linne, nf., a pool, pond; pl., linneachan.
Lion (lin), nm., a net; pl., lin, liontan.
Lionn or leann, nm., gen., leanna, beer.
Loch (locha), nm., a loch, lake.
Long (luinge), nf., a ship.
Luath (luaithe), adj., swift.
Luch (lucha, luchainn), nf., a mouse.
Lugha, less (see beag).

Ma, conj., if, ma ta, if so.
Mac (mic), nm., a son.
Mach, adv., out.

Maduinn (maidne), nf., morning.
Maide, nm., a stick.
Maireach, am maireach, adv., to-morrow.
Mairi, nf., Mary.
Maith, adj., good (see math).
Mall (maille), adj., slow, easy going.
Mar, adv., as, like as, mar sin, in the same manner.
Math (fearr), adj., good.
Mathair (mathar), nf., a mother.
Meadhon-la, nm., mid-day.
Measg (am measg), prep., among.
Mi, mise, pers. pron., I.
Mi-fhein, emph. pron., myself.
Mile nm., a thousand.
Mileis (mileise) adj. sweet.
Min (mine), adj. smooth.
Ministeir, nm., a minister.
Mionaidean, nm., minutes.
Miosa, adj., worse; see oic and dona.
Misd, misde, comp. of oic, worse.
Mna, mnatha, gen. of bean.
Mnathan, pl. of bean, a woman.
Mo, poss. pron., my.
Modh, nm., style.
Monadh, nm., a mountain; a moor.
Mor (mo, motha), adj., great, large.
Mor, nf., Sally, Sarah.
Moran, adj. and n., many, much.
Mu, prep., about, around.
Muir, a' mhuir, nf., a sea, the sea generally.
Muir, am muir, nm., a sea, the sea, a wave.
Mullach, nm., the top, summit.
Mur, conj. part., if not.
Na, conj., than.
Na, pl. art., the.
Na, neg. imper. particle, do not; let not.
Na, the rel. pron., what, that, which.
'Na (cont. for ann a), in his, her,
Nach, the rel. neg. pron., what not, who not, that not, etc.
Nach? inter. neg. part., is not?
Nach, irr. v., that it is not.
'N am, 'n an (cont. for ann am. ann an), in their.
Na 'm. na 'n, conj., if.
Nan, nam, gen. pl. art. of the.
Naoi, nu. adj., nine.
Neul (neoil), nm. a cloud.
Ni, nm., a thing.
Nis. adv., now.
No, conj., or.
Nochd, an nochd, adv., to-night.
'Nuair (an uair), adv., when.
Nuas, a nuas, adv., down—from above.

O, prep., from.
Obair (oibre, oibreach), nf., work; pl., oibrichean, obraichean.
Ochd, nu. adj., eight.
Og (oige), adj., young.
Oglach, nm., a youth.
Oidhche, nf., night.
Oirre, pp., on her.
Ol, v., drink (ag ol).
Oic (miosa), adj., bad, wicked.
Or (oir), nm., gold; pl., oir.
Oran, nm., a song.
Ord (uird), a hammer; pl., uird.
Orm, ort, orra, etc. (see par. 138).

Pairc, nf., a park.
Peann (pinn, peanna), nm., a pen; pl., pinn, peannan.
Piob (pioba), nf., (1) a tobacco pipe; (2) the bag-pipe.
Piuthar (peathar), nf., a sister; pl., peatraithcean.
Poit (poite), nf., a pot.
Port (puirt), nm., a port, a harbour, a tune.
Pris (prise), nf., a price.
Punnd, nm., pound.

Rach, irr. v., go (a'dol).
Radh, ag radh, vn., saying.
Rainig, irr. v., reached.
Ramh, nm., an bar; pl., raimh.

Raoir, an raoir, adv., last night.
Rathad, nm., a way, a road.
Re, prep., during.
Reic, v. and n., sell, selling.
Ri, ris, prep., to.
Riamh (a riamh), adv., ever, at any time before—used of past time only.
Rinn, v., did make, did.
Righ, mn., a king.
Ris, pp., to him.
Ris, a ris, or rithisd, adv., again.
Rium, riut, etc. (p. p. 404).
Robh, dept. v. was.
Roimh, prep., before.
Ruadh (ruaidhe), adj., red, reddish.
Rug, irr. v., past of beir, caught; bore; gave birth.
Ruig, irr. v., reach (ruigsinn, ruigheachd).
Ruith, v. and n., run, running.

Saighdear (saighdeir), nm., a soldier.
Salach (salaiche), adj., dirty.
Sailtfe, adj., salt, salted.
Samhach (samhaiche), adj., quiet calm.
Sam-bith, ever, along with co.
fear, etc.; co sam-bith, whoever; fear sam-bith, anyone.
Saor, nm., wright, joiner; also adj., free; cheap.
Seach, seachad air, prep., past, by.
Seachd, nu. adj., seven.
Seachduin (seachduine), nf., a week.
Sean(n), (sine), adj., old.
Seas, v., stand (seasamh).
Seasmhach, steadfast.
Seinn, v. and n., sing, singing.
Seoladair, nm., a sailor.
Seumas (Sheumas), nm., James.
Sgian, nf., a knife (see irreg. declen.)
Sgillinn (sgillinne), nf., a penny; sgillinn Shasunnach, an English penny, i.e., a shilling.
Sgine, gen. of sgian.
Sgith (sgithe), adj., tired, fatigued
Sgoil, nf., a school.
Sibh, sibhs, pro., you.
Sin, dem. pron., that, those.
Sine, com. adj., older.
Sinn, pro., we, us.
Sios, adv., down—resting.
Sios, a sios, adv., down, downwards; motion to.
Slan leibh, leat, farewell.
Slat (slaite), nf., a rod; pl., slatan
Sliabh, nm., a moor.
Slaite, nf., a rod; pl., slatan
Sluagh, nm., people.
Sloc. (sluic), nm., or nf., a pit, a hole.
Snamh, v. and n., swim, swimming.
So, dem. pron., this, those.
Sobhrach, nf., a primrose; pl., sobhraicheann
Sporan, nm., a purse.
Spag, spog (spaige, spoige). nf., a paw.
Sraid (sraide), nf., a street.
Sruth, nm., a stream.
Stabull, nm., a stable.
Steach, adv., in, inwards—expressing motion.
Stigh, a stigh, adv., in, inside—rest in.
Suas, adv., up, upwards.
Sud (siod), yon, that.
Suidhe, n. and vn., sitting.
Suil (sula), nf., an eye.

Taillear (tailleir), nm., a tailor.
Taobh, nm., a side.
Tapaidh, adj., clever.
Tarbh, nm., a bull.
Tasdan, nf., a shilling.
Teich, v., flee, escape (teich, teicheadh).
Teine, nm., a fire; pl., teintean, teineachan.
Thachras, v., will happen, from tachair.
Tha, v., is, am, art, are.
Thainig, v., came, past of thig.
Uam, uat, etc. (see par. 122).
Uan, nm., a lamb.
Ud. dem. pron., yon, yonder.
Uile, indef. pron., all, every.
Uillt, see allt.
Unneag, nf., a window.
Uird, gen. and pl. of ord

ENGLISH-GAELIC VOCABULARY.

About, prep., mu, mu thimchioll.
Across, prep., thar, thairis air.
Acquainted, adj., eolach.
Afraid, fear, n. eagal (par. 136).
After, prep., an déidh.
Afternoon, w»M.,*feasgar.
Again, adv., a ris (rithisd).
Against, prep., an aghaidh.
All, indef. pron., na h-uile, iad uile.
Alone, n. m., aonar (par. 383).
Already, adv., cheana; mar tha (literally, as it is).
Also, adv., cuideachd, mar an ceudna.
Among, prep., am measg.
Anger, nm., fearg.
And, conj., agus.
Another, eile, fear eile; one another, càch-a-chèile.
Any, sam-bith, air-bith; any money, ainigm sam-bith.
Are, v., tha, bheil, is.
Arrive (at), v., ruig (see irreg. verbs).
Ask, v., iarr (ag iarraidh).
Asleep (sleeping), a’ cadal; he is asleep, tha e ’na chadal.
Astonishment, nm., iongantas.
At, prep., aig.
Axe, nf., tuagh (tuaigne).
Bad, adj., olc, dona.
Bag, nf., maileid.
Bagpipe, nm., a’ phìob (mhór).
Bank, nf., braach.

Bè, v., bi, being (bhi).
Bed, nf., leabaidh (gen., leapa).
Beer, nm., lionn.
Before, adv., roimhe.
Behind, adv. and prep., an deidh, air cùlaobh.
Belong (see idiom, par. 413).
Better, adj., fearr, na’s fearr.
Between, prep., eadar.
Big, adj., mór (mo).
Bird, nm., eun, pl., eòin.
Black, adj., dubh.
Blue, adj., gorm.
Boat, nm., bàta.
Book, nm., leabhar.
Boy, nm., balach, gille.
Branch, nf., geug.
Brave, adj., treun.
Bread, nm., aran.
Break, v., brist.
Briar, nf., dreas.
Bridge, nf., drochaid.
Bright, adj., soilleir.
Broken, v. adj., briste.
Brother, nm., bràthair.
Brought, v., thug.
Brown, adj., donn.
Build, v., tog.
Bull, nm., tarbh.
But, conj., ach.
Butter, nm., im.
Buy, bought, v., ceannaich.

Calf, nm., laogh.
Calved, v., the cow calved, rug a’ bhó (laogh).
Came, v., thàinig.

Can, defcit. v., is urrainn (domh, etc.)

Cannot, defcit. v., cha’n urrainn (domh, etc.).

Cap, nm., or f., boineid.

Carriage, nf., carbad.

Cat, nm., cat.

Catch, v., glac, beir air.

Caught, v., rug (e, i, etc.), air.

Certain, certainly, cinnteach.

Chair, nf., cathair (cathrach).

Clever, adj., tapaidh.

Clock, nm., uaireadair; o’clock, uairean; e.g., eight o’clock, ochd uairean.

Cloud, nm., neul (neoil).

Coal, nm., gual.

Coat, nm., cota.

Cold, adj., furar.

Collie, nm., cu-caochrach.

Come, v., thig; coming, vn., a’ tighinn.

Corn, nm., arbhar.

Country, nf., duthaich, tlr; in the country, air an duthaich.

Day, nm., là, latha.

Death, bàs.

Deer, nm., fiadh; pl., féidh.

Dirk, nf., biodag.

Dirty, adj., salach.

Do, v. irreg., dean (past, rinn).

Dog, nm., cù; pl., coín.

Door, nm., dorus.

Down, adv., sios, a sios.

Drink, v., ól.

Drink, nf., deoch (gen. dibhe).

During, prep., ré, troimh.

Ear, nf., cluas; pl., cluasan.

Eat, v., ith (ìtheadh).

Early, adv., moch.

Edinburgh, Duneideann.

Enough, adv., gu leòr.

Evening, nm., feasgar.

Ever, adv., in the past—riamh; in the future—chaoidh.

Every, adj., a h-uile, gach.

Everyone (collectively), na h-uile;
(distributively), a h-uile neach, gach neach, a h-uile duine, etc.

Eye, nf., sùil; pl. sùilean.

Face, nf., aghaidh, aodann (nm.);
in face of, an aghaidh.

Faithful, adj., dileas.

Fall, v., tuít.

Family, nm., teaghlaich.

Farmer, nm., tuathanach.

Father, nm., athair.

Fear, nm., eagal (par. 136).

Fever, nm., fiabhras.

Field, nm., achadh.

Fierce, adj., borb.

Find, v. irr., faigh.

Fine, adj., maith (math), gasda.

Fire, nm., teine.

Fish, nm., iasg; gen., éisg.

Fish, v., iasgaich.

Fisherman, nm., iasgair.

Fishing, n. and vn., iasgach; going a-fishing, a’ dol a dh’iasgach.

Five, nu. adj., còig.

Floor, nm., lòr, urlar.

Follow, v., lean (a’ leantuinn).

Foot, nf., cas (coise).

Found, v. irr., fhuair.

Friend, nm., caraid; pl., càir-dean.

From, prep., bho, o.

Front (in front of), prep. and adv., roimhe, air beulaobh.

Full, adj., làn.

Gaelic, nf. Gaidhlig.

Garden, nm., gàrradh.

Gathering, vn., a’ trusadh.

Gave, v., thug.

Get, v. irr., faigh.

Girl, nf., caileag (caileige); pl., caileagan.

Give, v. irr., tabhair, thoir (fut. bheir).

Glasgow, Glaschò.

Glass, nf., gloine.

Glen, nm., gleann (gen., glinne).

Go, v., rach, imich.
Going, v., a’ dol.
Gold, nm., òr.
Good, adj., maith (math).
Good-bye, beannachd leibh (leat)
Good-night, oídhche mhath leibh (leat).
Got, v., fhuar.
Gold, nm., or.
Great, adj., mor (mo).
Grow, v., fas.
Hammer, nm., 6rd.
Hand, nf., lamh; pl., lamhan.
Happy, adj., sona.
Harbour, nm., port.
Hair, nm., ia.lit (fuilt).
Hat, nf., ad {gen., a'dide).
Have, v., tha — aig; tha cu aig an duine, the man has a dog (par. 111-3).
He, pers. pron., e; emph., esan.
Head, nm., ceann.
Hear, v. irr., cluinn (a’ cluinntinn)
Heard, v. irr., chuala.
Heavy, adj., trom.
Hen, nf., cearc {gen., circa).
Her, pron. i; emph., ise; pass. a.
Here, adv., an so.
Hero, nm., laoch, curaidh.
High, adj., arc; highest, as aird.
Hill, nm., cnoc, monadh; pl., cnuic.
Himself, pers. pron., e-fhein.
His, poss. pron., a.—aspirates its noun.
Hit, v., buail.
Hole, nm., toll; pl., tuill.
Home, nf., dachaith; at home, aig an tigh.
Horn, nf., adharc.
Horse, nm., eich.
Hour, nf., uair; pl., uairean.
House, nm., tigh, taigh.
How? inter. adv., ciamar?
How many? cia meud? cia lion?
Hunger, nm., acras (par. 136).
I, pers. pron., mi; emph., mise.
If, conj., ma.
If not, mur.
Immediately, adv., air ball.
In, into, prep., ann an, anns.
In, adv., a stigh.
Is? Am bheil? An e? etc.
Is, tha, bheil, is.
James, nm., Seumas.
John, nm., Iain.
Joiner, nm., saor.
Just now, adv., an trath so.
Kick, v., breab (a’ breabadh).
King, nm., righ; pl., righrean.
Knife, nf., sgian.
Know, v., I know, tha fhios (fios) agam; I do not know, cha’ eil fhios agam, aithne, etc. (par. 127-30).
Lad, nm., gille; pl., gilean.
Lamb, nm., uan; pl., uain.
Lame, adj., crubach.
Land, nf., tir.
Large, adj., mór.
Last (night), adv., an raoir.
Last (year), adv., an uraidh.
Late, adv., an-moch.
Lazy, adj., leisg.
Leave, v., fàg.
Lift, v., tog.
Little, adj., beag.
Little, adj. nm., beagan.
Loch, nm., loch.
Long, adj., fada.
Lost, v. adj., caillte.
Love, nm., gradh.
Make, v. irr., dean.
Malcolm, nm., Calum.
Man, nm., fear, duine; pl., fir, daoine.
Many, adj., (many a), iomadh.
Many, adj. n., móran.
May, v. faod.
Mary, nf., Màiri.
Mason, nm., clachair.
Meal, nf., min.
Middle, nm., meadhon; in the middle, anns a’ mheadhon.
Midnight, meadhon-oidhche.
Milk, nm., bainne.
Minute, nf., mionaid.
Mine (see poss. prons., par. 413).
Mist, nm., ceò.
Month, nm., mìos.
Moon, nf., gealach.
Moor, nm., raon, monadh, sliabh.
More, na’s mò.
Morning, nf., maduinn (maidne).
Mother, nf., mathair.
Mountain, nf., beinn; pl., beann-
tan.
Mouse, nf., luch (gen., luchainn)

Must, feumaidh, is eudar; I must
feumaidh mi, is eudar dhomh.
My, poss. pron., mo.
Myself, pers. pron., mi-fhein.
Near, adj., fagus, faisg.
Nearly (see defective verbs).
Neat, adj., grinn, sgiobalta;
she
is neater than, tha i na’s
grinne na, etc.
Need, nm., feum; tha feum agam
air bainne, I need milk, lit.,
there is need at me on (with)
milk.
Nest, nm., and f., nead.
Net, nm., lion (lin).
New, adj., iir.
Never, adv. (say “not ever”),
I never saw him, cha’n fhaca
mi riamh e.
Nice, adj., gasda, laghach.
Night, nf., oidhche; at night,
am beul na h-oidhche (at dusk).
Nine, adj., naoi.
No, adv., cha’n eil, cha’n e, cha.
None (say not one), par. 476.
Noise, nm. and f., fuaim.
Now, adv., a nis, an drásda.
Nut, nf., cno; pl., cnothan.
Oar, nm., ràmh; pl., ràimh.
O’clock (hour), uair, uairean.
Off (away), adv., air falbh.
Off (e.g., put off you), dhiot (see
P.P.).
Old, adj., aosda, sean.
Older, eldest, sine.

On, prep., air.
One, nu. adj., aon.
One (any one), indef. pron., fear-
sam-bith.
One (one of) aon de, etc.
Open, v., fosgail (fosgladh).
Open, v., adj., fosgaille.
Other, adj., eile; other friends,
càirdean eile.
Ought, v., is coir.
Our, poss. pron., ar.
Out, adv. (rest in), a muigh.
Out, adv. (motion towards), a
mach.
Out of (see prep. pron. par. 404).
Over (towards one), adv., a null.
(away from), a null.
Over (me), prep., thairis orm =
tharam.
Own, fein, fhein.
Ox, nm., damh (daimh).

Park, nf., pàirc.
Pay, v., páigh or pàidh (paidh-
eadh).
Pen, nf., peann (gen., pinn or
peanna).
Penny, nf., sgillinn, peighinn.
Pen, sheep-pen, fang.
Pity, nm., truas.
Pipe, nf., ploib.
Pit, nm. or f., sloc.
Place, nm., aìte.
Poet, nm., bard.
Poor, adj., bochd.
Price, nf., prís.
Primrose, nf., sobhrach.
Put, v., cuir.
Present, adv., an lathair.
Presently, adv., an drasd.
Pretty, adj., boidheach
(boidhche).

Purse, nm., sporan.
Pound, nm., punnd.

Quick, adj., luath, clis; (adv.,
gu luath).
Quiet, adj., samhach, ciùin.
Quietly, adv., gu samhach, gu
ciùin.
Rain, *nm.*, uisge.
Reach, *irreg. v.*, ruig.
Read, *v.*, leugh.
Ready, *adj.*, deas.
Reap, *v.*, buain.
Reaping, *n.* and *vn.*, buain.
Rise, *v.*, éirich.
River, *nf.*, abhainn (aibhne).
Rod, *nf.*, slat; *pl.*, slatan.
Run, *ran*, *v.*, ruith.
Sad, *adj.*, bronach.
Sailor, *nm.*, seoladair.
Salt, salted, *adj.*, saillte.
Say, *irr. v.*, abair.
Saying, *ag radh.*
Saw, *v.*, Chunnic.
Scotland, Alba, Albainn.
Scotsman, *nm.*, Albannach.
School, *nf.*, sgoil.
Score, *nu.* adj., fichhead.
Sea, *nm.* or /.*, muir.
Second, *nu.* adj., dara.
See, *v. irr.*, faiac.
Sell, *v.*, reic (a' reic).
Seed, *nm.*, siol (sil).
Sharp, *adj.*, geur.
Sheep, *nf.*, caora; *pl.*, caoraich.
Shepherd, *nm.*, ciobair.
Shilling, *nf.*, tasdan.
Ship, *nf.*, long.
Shoe, *nf.*, brog; *pl.*, brógan.
Shore, *nm.*, cladhach; *f.*, tràigh (trághad).
Shower, *nf.*, fras (froise).
Shut, *v.*, druìd, dùin.
Shut, *v.* adj., druìdte, dùinte.
Sick, *adj.*, tinn.
Side, *nm.*, taobh.
Sing, *v.*, seinn (a' seinn).
Sister, *nf.*, piuthar.
Sit, *v.*, suidh (suidhe).
Sleep, *nm.*, cadal.
Sleep, *v.*, cailil (a' cadal).
Slow, *adj.*, mail.
Small, *adj.*, beag, caol.
Snow, *nm.*, sneachd.
Soldier, *nm.*, saighdear.
Someone, *indf. pron.*, cuid-eiginn.
Some, *cuid.*
Song, *nm.*, òran.
Son, *nm.*, mac; *pl.*, mic.
Soon, *adv.*, luath.
Sound, *nm.* and *f.*, fuaim.
Sowing (seed), *v.*, a' cur (sil).
Speak, *v.*, labhair, bruidhinn.
Stable, *nm.*, stàbull.
Stand, *v.*, seas (seasamh).
Still, *adj.*, samhach.
Stick, *nm.*, maide.
Stone, *nf.*, clach (cloiche); *pl.*, clachan.
Stream, *nm.*, sruth.
Strike, *v.*, buail.
Strong, *adj.*, laidir.
Sun, *nf.*, grian (gen., grian).
Sure, *adj.*, cinnteach.
Sweet (in taste), *adj.*, milis.
Sweet (music), *adj.*, binn, ceòl-mhor.
Sweetness, *nf.*, milsead, milseachd.
Swift, *adj.*, luath.
Table, *nm.*, bòrd.
Tailor, *nm.*, taillear.
Tall, *adj.*, árd.
Tell, *v.*, innis (ag innseadh).
Tell (say to), *v.*, abair ri or ris.
Ten, *nu.* adj., deich.
Terrier, *nf.*, abhag.
Than, *conj.*, na.
Thank you, gu'n robh math agaibh (agad).
That, *conj.*, gu'n (m).
Their, *poss pron.*, an (am).
Then, *adv.*, an sin.
There, *adv.*, ann, an sud (pars 61-144).
This, *dem. pron.*, so.
Though, *conj.*, ged (a).
Throw, *v.*, tilg.
Tied, *adj.*, ceangailte.
Tired, *adj.*, sgìth.
To, *prep.*, do, ri, ris.
To-day, *adv.*, an diugh.
Coinneamh Ghàidhlig.

A Gaelic Meeting

A number of Phrases and Expressions grouped together for the first time. They will be useful as an aid in the conducting of routine business at all Gaelic Meetings.

Price 3d, post free 4d.

This, which is the first such list published in Gaelic, has been compiled in the hope that it may be the means of introducing the more general use of the Gaelic language by the Gaelf at public meetings, especially in Gaeldom, and at meetings of Gaelic Societies, where the conducting of business in English is so sadly out of place.

Alasdair Mac Labhruinn agus a Mhac.
360 Sraid Earraghaidheal.
Glaschò.

Coinneamh Ghàidhlig. A Gaelic Meeting, a small booklet containing expressions for use at meetings; debates; phrases for moving and seconding resolutions, and many other useful phrases, in Gaelic, 3d (6 cents), postage 4d.

It is an excellent little booklet and well worth its price (3d). Those who are in the habit of conducting routine business in Gaelic will find it extremely useful. It will save them from using such expressions as: “Tha mi ‘glusad’” for “I move a motion,” and “mionaidean,” for minutes, etc. We cordially recommend this booklet.—“An Deò Ghràine.”

I may say that some years ago a branch of An Comunn was established in our parish. At the very outset of our career we were confronted with such words as president, secretary, treasurer, committee, syllabus, etc.—words that do not enter into our work-a-day conversation, but belong strictly to the select field of public affairs. Despite this difficulty, we determined to carry on the business of An Comunn, as far as possible, in the mother tongue; we felt that an organisation founded with the sole object of propagating and advancing the Gaelic language could not with consistency afford to play second fiddle to the mushroom English. In our dilemma we cast round to find some means of meeting the situation; it was then we discovered that there is published already a little handbook of Gaelic words and phrases entirely suited to our needs. The contents of this booklet would be learned by any intelligent Highlander in a very short time, and, having mastered it, he could have no difficulty in discussing public affairs with the utmost facility in his native tongue. It might be urged that this is altogether an exceptional instance, but the fact remains that English words waylay us at every turn of the conversational road.—D.B.F. in “An Deò Ghràine.”
A GOOD BOOK FOR THE LEARNER

UIRSEGEULAN GHAILDHLIG.

FIONN ANN AN TIGH A' BHLAIR BHUIDHE

GUN CHOMHAS SUIDHE NO EIRIGH

FINGAL IN THE HOUSE OF THE BLAR BHUIDHE

WITHOUT THE POWER OF SITTING DOWN OR RISING UP.

PRICE 3d. POSTAGE 1d. EXTRA

The Gaelic original has been well edited and revised, and it and the
English translation are so arranged into short paragraphs side by side on
opposite pages that there will be no difficulty in following the construction
of the Gaelic grammar. It is an ideal home teacher—easy, entertaining and
instructive. The student into whose hands it gets cannot help learning a few
words at the very first reading and the words first learnt will catch his eye in
other positions and on other pages. He will examine the new sentences in
which these few words appear and will thereby familiarise himself with further
words and new sentences. Rapid progress is sure to be made, and the English
translation is always at hand to correct and avoid any misconstruction being
put on the Gaelic Text.

Fingal appears in a large number of the Gaelic Heroic Ballads, as leader
of the whole band of Heroes to whom the name of Fians or Fingalians is
given. They followed the chase wherever venison was to be found, both in
Scotland and in Ireland. The tales told of them are both numerous and
entertaining. Some tell of deep and sad sorrow; some refer to feats of strength
and activity, and in all of them Fingal figures as a man of great wisdom and
sagacity. There are several stories told of Fingal and his band; this being
one of them, telling how he was in the House of the Blar-Buidhe without the
power of rising up or of sitting down.

This useful little booklet is based upon a tale written down by the late
Mr. Donald C. Macpherson, of the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, the reciter
being Mr. Macpherson's grandmother. It was contributed by J. F. Campbell,
of Islay, to the "Revue Celtique" in 1870, and was afterwards reprinted in the
"Gael" of January, 1875. The present edition has been thoroughly
revised, the Gaelic text having an English translation upon the opposite page.
The text is, on the whole, very satisfactory, and the translation seems
thoroughly reliable. Variants of the tale have been published in Macdougall's
"Folk and Hero Tales," J. G. Campbell's volume "The Fians," and else-
where. The present version seems a good one, and is couched in the strong
direct idiomatic language of the people. It may be added that the translation
following, as it does, the idiom of the original should be very helpful to
elementary students of the language, for whom the publication is in all respects
admirably suited.—"Northern Chronicle."

The student of Gaelic will find an entertaining aid to progress in his studies
in a Fingal tale just published by Messrs. Alexander MacLaren & Son. Argyle
Street, Glasgow. It is entitled "Fingal in the House of Blar Buidhe," and
recounts the adventures of the son of Cunhal in the house of a giant whose
staple diet was wild boars and the flesh of men. The Gaelic and English
versions are given on alternate pages, an arrangement which lends itself admir-
ably to the purposes of a home teacher.—"The Evening Times."
The Clachan Collection
FOUR of the BEST GAEIC SONGS

Gaelic Words Edited by "Fionn"
Melodies arranged by "Fionn" and Malcolm Macfarlane
Pianoforte Accompaniments arranged by C. R. Baptie

Price, 1/6 net each. The set, 6/-

Postage on one song if folded in half for envelope, 1d extra;

Neil MacLeod's Two Best Songs—
(1) "FAR AN ROBH MI’N RAOIR."
(2) "AN GLEANN ’SAN ROBH MI OG."

These two songs are now ready. It is generally conceded that they show
Neil MacLeod at his best. They are great favourites at "The Mod" and all
Gaelic and Clun Concerts. The melodies and pianoforte accompaniments
are by the best composers.

Perhaps the most popular of his songs is that delightful one, "An gleann
'san robh mi og."

'N uair a phileas ruinn an samhradh,
Bidh gach doire's crann fo chroic;
Na h-eoin air bharr nam meanglan
Deannath caithreim bhinn le'n ceol;
A chlann bheag a'ruith le lorn
Mu gach tom a'buin nan ruis—
'B'le mo mhiann a bhi 's an am sin
Anns a'ghieann ’san robh mi og.

The haunting refrain of this hymn of the exiled Gael has rung in the ears
of many a Highland exile, from the prairies of Canada to "where the dawn
comes up like thunder out of China 'cross the bay." It is true poetry of the
heart, and this immortal poem at once presents a vivid picture of the Glen
and its life, and expresses the yearning love of his native Highlands which
possesses the heart of every Gael.

In "An Gleann 'san robh mi og" (My Bonnie Native Glen), he gives us
a pleasing picture of the social life in a Highland glen in his happy boyhood
days; then we have another picture where with pathos, feeling and beauty of
expression and sentiment the bard sings of "the change 'twixt now and then."
and in haunting strains laments the desolated land and banished people.

Duncan Ban Macintyre's Popular Song—
(3) "CEAD DEIREANNACH NAM BEANN."

Ben Dorain seems to have been Duncan Ban's sacred mountain. He not
only sang its praises and declared its beauty in the varied and various rhythms
peculiar to Gaelic Poetry, but when the aged poet, after a residence of some
years in Edinburgh, visited the Highlands in 1802 to bid a last "Farewell to
the Bens," he climbed the Celtic Pisgah, and from its summit gazed on the
scenes of his younger and happier days, and poured out his sorrowing soul in
a poem worthy of the bard and worthy of the occasion. The aged bard, with
hairy locks, was in his seventy-eighth year, and we need not wonder that his
soul was sad as he gazed on the scenes of his former days. The friends of his
youth were gone for ever—even the hill itself was changed. Its proud sights
were gone! The troops of wild deer and graceful does had given place to sheep,
and the poet marked the changes and sorrow filled his soul. The very title of
the song is full of sadness—"Cead deireannach nam Beann"—The Last Fare-
well to the Bens. Almost every Gael is familiar with its opening lines:

'Bha mi'n de 'm Beinn Dorain
'S na coir cha robh mi ainealach.

Another of the Popular Songs of To-Day—
(4) "BU CHAOMH LEAM 'BHI MIREADH."

This sweet little song formed one of Miss A. C. Whyte's Mod Prize Songs
of 1907. It is a popular pastoral melody and was taken down by her
from the singing of a Poolewe lady. It makes a valuable addition to a new
programme.